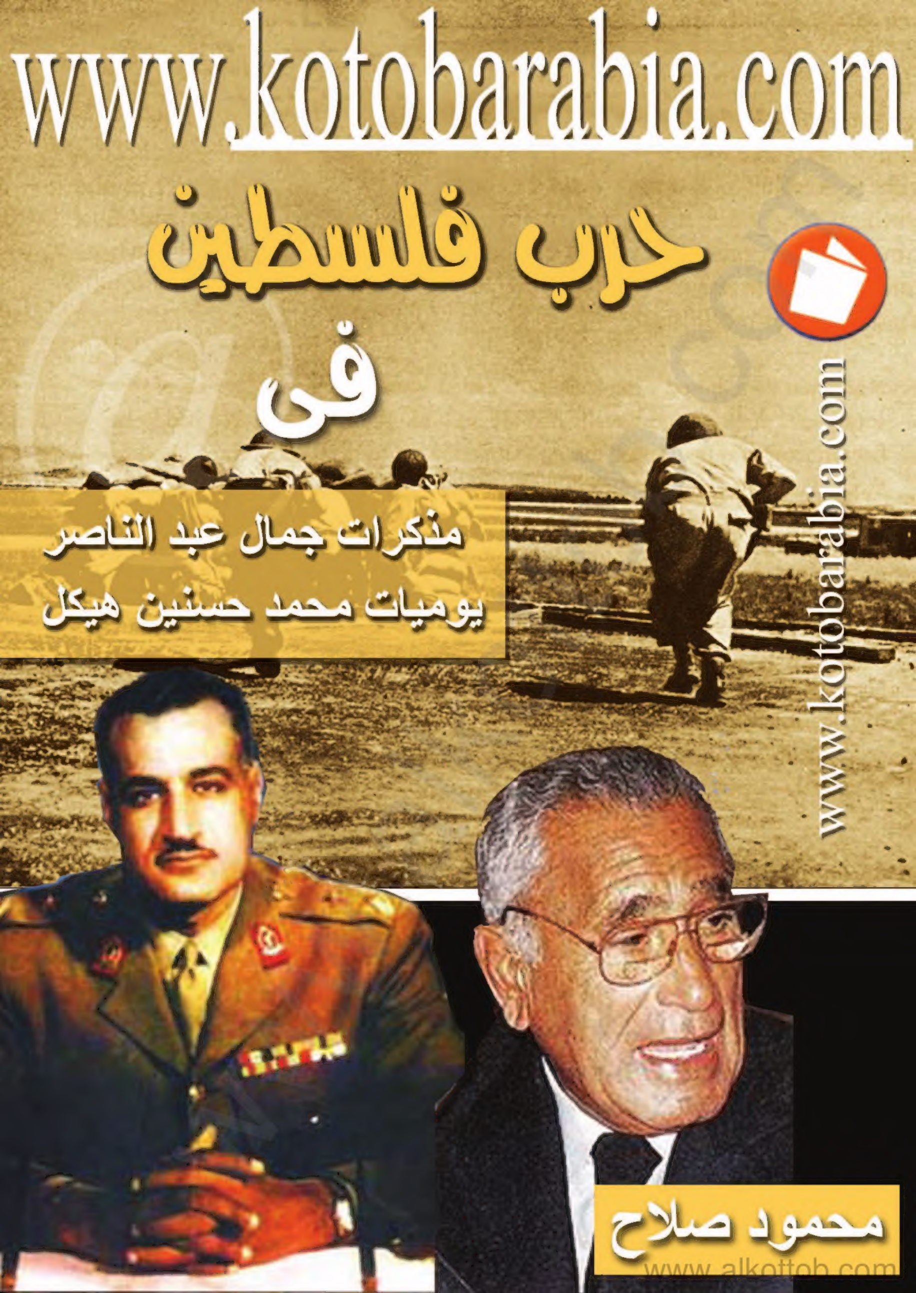


www.kotobarabia.com
حرب فلسطين
فى
مذكرات جمال عبد الناصر
يوميات محمد حسنين هيكل
www.kotobarabia.com
محمود صلاح
www.alkottob.com

حرب فلسطين

في

مذكرات جمال عبد الناصر
يوميات محمد حسنين هيكل

محمود صلاح

ƨ ƥŇǥ

الفصل الأول

[illegible] ..

[illegible]!

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible]

.. [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

ýĂùPþ Ĭ ùĐŽŽĞTĞóÕþþŢ ýŏŽĞţžǫƯ ƧƘǲƒ ĞǽžǲĂ

ǲǂĐŀǒǂŧ ǅ!ƒ ŀŏơĞƒ Lǰdžǲǂŧ dŽǒ ǈ ǊǰǰĬ ƧŢ dǲ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ

!ţ ǒŋĐŽǊǰLJ ĂŧŖ ĞĐĐ ŎTƒƧ|Lƒ Ǌ

***

ŀLǰǒŢ ĐǲǲƧơ Lǰdž ĂƧĞ||ĐǲŽ þĂdžŁ ƒŖĞžǂ!Ă

ţ ǒŋ!ƒ || ǒơŕhǒdŽǊǰýhɿ ĞǲdžǩýþĐƨĂƧĞLǂǒĐž

Ƨþùǒơ þùdždž||!Ŗǒ ǲŽŪƒ Ĭ ƯŽĐĂ.LǰĞdžǂþŀ|ǲĂdžýlþ

!ĞƒƧƨĂƒ Σ ǲƧ ŎTƒƧ|Lƒ ĐǲŽLǰĂþŀǒǒ!ƒ ƧǒĂ

ĂǒĞžđ ĐǲǒLǰǒŢ ĐǲǲƧơ Ĭ ƧŢ dǲ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ ýPþ ƒŖǂǊ

! lãŋ5. čĕĐĚ

KƒƧǊĞǓdžKŋƧP :ɣƧǅ!ƒ ɣǲĐǓĂƨơdžɣǒŋLǰýĂ|ǒ

..ŀǅùŢ ƒĂ ŀǒǲT KƒƧǊĞdžKLǂĂ.ɣƧơ!ĞɣɣĞǲǩ čĕĐĚ

LǰǂùɣƒĂLƒ yǂǰ ŎTƒƧ|Lƒ ŎdžǲþĂdždž þĂ LǰĞdžǂþ ŎǲĂ

ŎþþùŢ ýŏŽĞţžǫǂǒǲƒ || !Ŗ ǲǂĐĂ. ɣƧơĐǲǂŖ dž ţ ǒŋ!ƒ

ŎǲŢ dž ƧŋĐĂ ÜŖǲŖǲĂ LǰĞdžǂþ ŎǲƒĂƯ Ʒ Lǲ Ĭ Ŗƒ ÜĞĞó

LǰýĂ|ǩ KLǂ ŎŖƒ ÜǲƧǓLŧ ŋǰĂ ǊǲƟƧT ÜǊdžǲǲĂơ LǰĐ

Ǳǲ ŎǲýPþţǰ ŎĞĞĂÜĐǲƒ ŀǲƧhKƋLŧ !ĂþýǲƧŢ ǫ

ĭ ƧùⲦ dǂţ ǒuŋ!ƒ LǂǁБă ƧPD ǂŏơƓĹ LǂŀǂŽ . Ɣ Ƨƺ!ƒ ydǂƞ ƒĂ

!Ƨ ŏƶư

ƒR LǂǴ ǂ ǑƿƿⲦ ýŏƵƓƭž LǂǂǃǄ ǂ! : ŬĂƽơdǅ ǂƔŏŋLǂƧ ŏư ŏĂ

. Ɣ Ƨùơ!ƒ yùdǂƵĂ!ƒ Ɣ ƨơ LǂǂĂ . Ǐƿư ǴǂĂĂ . ǂǂƦƭ ǂƶƭž

LǂĂ Ùă Ăùƿţ ǒuŋ!ƒ LǂD LǂƧdǂƞ hƔƶT!ƒ ǂdĂǂơ!ƒ KƶLǂĂ

!KǴǂƒ Ƶ ƿƧŋdǅLǂǂǂƵ Ǘƒ

. ǂƽŏƶư DǂƵT Ĭ LǂƘ ǂǂĂ KǴǂƒ Ƶ ǂdǂǂKLǂǂ ǂǂǂĂ

ƻ ƧùƶLǂLDǴǂLǂDLǂdžƧƿǂţ ŏŋ!ƒ LǂK!ǂ ǂdĂǂơ!ƒ

ǂLǂǂDƵǑǂƒ ǂ|ǂơ!ƒ

.. ǂdĂǂơ!ƒ ǴǂⲦ ǴǂƱ

ƿ|! . ǴǂǂǂƸ||!R Ƨ ǔP Ĭ DǂǂKLǂǂ ǂ|ǂơ!ƒ Ƨ̊ Ⲧ ū! Lǂǂ!Ă

! Ɣ ƶT ǂ ǴǂǂP

LǂuǂDŬǴơ!ƒ Ǒùǂǂdǂ KĂùⲦ ǴǂDĂ LǂƱ DǂǂLǂǂ

ƿùư LǂǂĂ Ǘ ĂLǂdǂĂ ĭ ƿǂdǂ LĂƶ!ǴƔ!ǴǑLǂǂ ǗǑLǂơ!ƒ

! ǂdǂƶ!ƒ ţ Ăŏŋ!ƒ ýPƿk

.. ýǴǂ!ƒ yǂǂĂ yǂǂD KLǂǂĂ

"ǂŋĂǴǂƒ" ƧǴ ơ ƧǂƦĂ ǗƩ Ǵǂƒ ǂǂhýƛdǂǂǂdǂǂdǂKLǂ

.ǴinǂĂƵ ƿùLǂ ǂŏƧⲦ dǂ LĂ|!ƒ ýǴǂƭ ƒ Ǒ5ǴǂƧƓĂ . ƒǂǂŋ

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

K'ƒƧdžžùƪ dƷĂ ƔùǒƉýùk ƾĂ5ƗǒƧƮ dƷ K'ƒƧƑƓƒ"

!"ƗǒƥĂnǰƒ

. "ƗƵƓƒ ƻ ƧƲ Ŏ5ƥĂnǰƒ DǒƥŽƔDŽK'ƒƧĂTLdžƓƥǥ"

!"LǰŎƪ ƉƵŽǒƨƵ!ƒ ƫ Ăǒƞ!ƒ K'DƤŽ"

!lƧNǰƒ Ŏ5K'ƓƒƑƓ!ƒ DĂžĂNjDĂžƒ ƒRNjLǰĂ

LƉyǒùTTĂ .Ɨ ƥƒĂơ ƓǒƥyƥĂ ƗǒƧǰƪ Ǘƒ LƉyǒTDǰ5

.Ɣùnǰ NǰǒžƵLĂ ýkƥƥ Σ ƥƵ K'ǖơdžƔơƓƒ Σ ƥƵ ƥĂĂƥ

Ŏ5Lǰ ƓǒǰƥĂƥơ!ƒ Ĭ !ǥƧ5ƒ ƓƒƓžƧƥơ ƾǒƧƒ LƉyǒTTĂ

!ĭ ƧǂƮ Ƶ YƓžƒ

!K'ǒdžƥƓž ǒƧT!ƒ ƧNǰǕƒ ƻƪ LƉžNǰƓǰ ŎDyǒTTĂ

Ŏù5K'ƓƥƓơ dʹ ƠRLƵ ăƧPDK'ƓƒƑƓ K'ƧnǰĂ

!lƧNǰƓƥơRdž

!lƥǒƧ5ƗǂDŽLƒǒdžŎ5ƓƥĂnǰĎƌČ ýkƥLƵ ƗƵƑƓĂ

ƧùƘƁ ýùdžk DĂžƒ || !R Ŏ5ƗǒƧƮ dƷ ƻ ơƮ !ƒ K'LǰĂ

lƥùơkdƷ K'ƓǒǕĂƒ ƻ ƒƧùƘƒĂ ǕǰƒƧùƪ ǥƗ!Ăƥ DǒƥLǕƵǥ

.ƓǰƗǒǂƧdžƒ

.. lƧǒơ Ŏ5lƧNǰƒ ýNǰƫ ƓĂ

ƗLǰŎƪ ƉƵŽ5Ɨ ƥơǒƒRƓdž ƧƵǒƥơDLǂǒDž

***

ýƘĢdž. ŇJʢLjčT Ģʄ ƥǆ ýĢdž LĴĢ .. ŎLĢʄ ýɳƧ!ʄ

Ģǿ ýʈ ơĂ.NǇǆ LǇdžƧƱƿ ýǂɦɹǂƧƨdž ƧĢdž Ʊ Ģ ĭ Ʀʄ

DǇǆ ʄ ĭ Ʀù!ʄ ƧƑĢƛʄĂ ĭ ƧT dž Ƨǂ Ƶ DĢĂ Ĭ ƥƧD Ĭ DŽ

Ģʝ ʢLJŎùNjKùLĢ ŎƦʄĂ.LǇŎ DŽ Ƨơ KĢƵĂ KƧĢ

ɫùƶƦƧDƥùƶɦNǇƧ ydžĢǇDǇŎƦʄ ĂdĂöǀƧĂƛ KĢ ĢƦǫ

! ƔƧơ!ʄ ljƦNjLǇdžǇĂƵD

:ýǂŎNjƦĢ Ǖʄ ýƥNǇĢdžĂŏŎƼ

ƔƧùơ!ʄ ljƦNJƤLJDýƥ.. LǇŎ DŽ Ƨơ KTƵ ƥ!"

!ĢǇƵƧ

ɫLǇʅ Σ ƧĢdžɳT DĢDLǇdžĂ KʄƦ ƔƧơ!ʄ ljƦNjKTƵ

LǇƵ ɫ ơƞD ĢǇǫKɦNǇĂ ŎɦĢơ KDǅ ƥKLǂĂ. čëĐĚ

.. ɫǀǇơ!ʄ

ƽùǇơƦʄ ɫùǇdžŎùƼKùɦ "DĂʄ ƧĢD"LJDƧǂƦĂ

ɫùǀǇơ!ʄ Lǥ: ýĂǀk– Σ ƥ!ʄ – DǅĂDLǇdžýĂǕʄ ŎƼơT !ʄ

. KĢƵʄƦǗʄĂ ƔƱP!ʄĂ KĢʄĢ!ʄĂ KĢƧɦ LǇĂƱ ŎƼ ljĂk

Ĭ DŽĂ Ʊ ĢLǇʄ Kơk.ĢǇƵ ɫ ơɦ ýĂĢŏLǇdžǗǫĢƦƶŏǕĂ

. Ĭ ùƦǅ ɫ ƛɳ ĢǇDŽƧƛĢk Ŏƞʄ ýĂǐ!ʄ ŎƼĂ. ƔɳǇǅLǇ!D

! ýĢƧɦ ƧĂNǰ ĢǇƼDǇ ýDǅĂ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

ǂŏĎɣƙǂŏĿĴĐƧȚ Ǥǰƥǳ ýǤǳ ýǤű ĐŽƧƱƤŏĿǂŏĐǆ

Ǥǳǭĵ !ƒ Ŏù5ƥǸƒ ǸĴĵŮĂ! .. Ŀĵǒĵ ĐǄɣƨơ ĿƸ ƘƒƧǂƦdž

!Ǥǰ ǒĂhǤǳŽ

.. Ǥǳǰ !ƒ ƧĂƥ ă ƥơƺƧȚ Ǥǰ ƥǳ ýǤǳ ýƤƥ ĐǆƘƒƦ

Ŀǰ dŽŎùǂǒƧdŽĐĐǆƒƦŏdǳǰ ǒĂhǤǳǓ ƧƸƙ ƘĿǤĂ

ŰĐǴǒŰƒ || ù ĐǅǴƸǤǰ Ŏ5 Ŀĵƙ ƥĂǒĂǋƘĿǤ ŎƙƒĐǆŰƒ

ɣǤ ƸĐƥȚŏǤǳǂhǤƥȚơ Ŏ5ĐǆŰƒ ljƦǋĂɳƧƤdž ƧǤǒĂ

lĂùƥĂ lǳɳǤǰĂǂùǂhǤĐǰĵ ǤĴĐǳƸ∑ hơĂ Ü∑ Ǥǰ

! ǂǒǰƒ ƘƒƧǄdž

yǤǒǤǳ !ƒ ƧƒhǰƸ|dŽŎ5ƧȚ Ǥǰ ƥǳ ýǤǳ ∑ ĐɳǅĂ

.Ďǳǰǂ ƒơĐ

ǂùȚ |! Ŀǰ :ýǤ5ǂ ƥơ ǤǳȚ Ǥǰ ƥǳ ăĂƧ ƥƸhǤǳĂ

!ĿǰƱhɘ ĐǅȚ ƥý‡‡ - Ďǳǰ

..ǸĴĐǅĂ ǸĴhƥŽù ĐǅĿǰǤùȚ!ƒ Ĭ !ĂƦ ƒ ýĂŰƒ ýƱhƥ

!ǤǰƒĂ ƧȚ!ǤǤǳƸƨĂ

Ŀǰù hɣù ơ!ǤĂ ƧŏƤ!ǤĿƥǳŏɣǒƱ ýɳƧ ŎĿǰƒ ýƱhƒĂ

.. ∑ Ǥǰ

.. Ďǳǰǂ ƒơĐŎuơdǅĂ

ƨǂŧƋǠ. ýƙƿ ƚ ƋƶƨŴŋ ĿǤƠƠƮ!ƒ ƝǂƋƋǯ Ʀƒ ýŋƨ!ƒ Ɣǂƙƨǒ Ǡ

Ĭ ù ƊǮǮƓǂǰ ƶ ƋǰƧƒ ǑǀƊǯ ǒơŀƱ ƥǵ!ƒ ƟƧ ƪ ƋǯƔƙƨǒǁǁ!Ʀ Ŀƌǯ

!ƔǒƱ!ƒ ýŋƨ!ƒ

.. ƖƨƢǗƒ ƖǠƨƦ Ĭ !ǥƚ ƒƥơǕƒ ǑƮƋƙǠ

ƾ ƙƱƖǰǠ ǙƔǒƱ!ƒ ýŋƨ!ƓƔ ƖǴ ýǂ ĿƌǰƘ ƓƒƊ!ƒ ƱǒơƙǠ

Ǚǁ Ʈ!ƒ ƘƒƨƱ Ŀ ƝƥǖƙǠ ǙƓƋƒ Ŀƌǯ Ŀƥƌǯ ĿƌǯƔǒ ƨ!ƒ ƝƌǯǮ

!ƔǒƝ!ƒ ƊǴǗƒ ƚ ƽýƤƒƥ Ɲǥư ƙǠ

.. ƝǤ ƵƊƔǒƱ!ƒ ýŋƨ!ƒ ƥƽǒǠ

!ĿŋǒĿƊƥǂǒǠ

.. ƾ ƥƪ ǒǠƊƴ ƪǯǒ Ŀƌǯ ŋǒǖƼ.. ƖƨǂĿǥ ǑƼǑƋǯƨǂĿǥ

!ƝǥƩ ƓƒƔ ƨƥƊĬ ƙơ

ǑƼƴƥǠ Ǒƙƒ ƘǠǂƚƶƒ ǁǁ ƒƨƮ ƝǀƼ ĿƵ ƴƼǒ ĿƊýǠƓǒ

ƖƥƮƙ – ƓƖǒƦǮƪ ơƊǑƙƒǠ - ƚǁƼƊǯ ƥƝƒǠƮ!ƒ ƒƦƼ. ƓƥƋǒ

!ƚ ǒƥƥơ ýǖƩ ƋƱ

.. ƔǒƱ!ƒ ýŋƨ!ƒ ƱƦƙǒǠ

. ƨƓƖƒǠ .. ƴǒư ǒ

Ɲƒƒŋ Ǡ ǑƼ ƾ ơ!ƒ ƊǴƋǯƱƦǮǠ. ƝǀƼĿĬ ƊǮƩ ƋƧ ƝǂƋǯ

. ƝƊǮƩ ƥĿĭ Ʀƒ ýƱǤƥ ƊǴƋƶǠǂƞǯ

.. ĂNjĭ ƙơĂ

ƧĈ ơ!ƒ Įƥƫ ĿǰĂǆ ŰNǰƵŽƟƠ!Ǘƒ Ʊƺưƌ ĿǰĂǆ… ƒŖŎƤD

.Ǵǰǂƙƨǒ Ɗ!ƶ ǆǆƶƞ ƞ hŇǰƽĿ ǰ ƊƵƵ ƧƙƶǒƥǤǒ ŰNǰĂơ

!Ǵǰǂƙƨƒ Ŏ5 ǴŅƵǒ ƧǂƽǒƊĂǆ

***

:ĿǰŎƪ ƊƼǅ ƧƠ ĿƵ NǰƧǂƙdǆŎ5ƧƫƠ Ǵǰƒ ƥƶƺ ýǴƶǅ ýǴ

!"ĿǰŎƪ ƊƼŐ5ƧƫƠ dǅ ǒƞhǂƫ |!ƒ ĮƦNǰŎĿƙǂƦƥ!Ă"

!ǂdǆNǰĿǰŎƪ ƊƼŐ5 ƘĿǤƥ!

!ǂdǆƞ ƊǑǆǂƫ ƥŎ5ĿǤ Ǵǆ

ƑĿǰŎƪ ƊƼŐ5ƊƵǅNǰĭ Ƙƒ Ŀdǅǂ!Ă

!ĿǰŎƪ ƊƼǆdǆƞ ƔǂƙƨǒƊ!ƶƫ dǅ ǒƞ ĿƊŎǒƵ Ŏ5

.ĮƧǒƺ Ǵǰǂƙƒ ǴǆǰĂ

.ǂ!ƥǗƒ NǰƵƵ ƟƒĂ

.NǰƥǗƙĬ ƙơ ƘǴǰƫ!ƒ ƧƞƥĂ

. ǴƒƧhƕ. NǰǰƵĂNǰĭ Ƙƒ ƧƨĂƒ NǰƵǆƙĂ

!ƫ ǒƞ!ƒ Ŏ5ǂ ƥơ .. ƊǑǆǂŎ5ǂ ƥơ ǴǂƵĂ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

الفصل الثاني

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

2 ùUĂdžŝĨĵƥlƨĞŝŝ DĂžŝƒ Ĭ ƙơ ŎLĦĴDŎ5ĿĵŎk K'!ƒƨĞĂž

ÜĿĵƥƨŬƒ ƧùnĿĵ ùDžŽŽĂĵöï ĦƒÜŎhĿĵĵŽƧ[η ƥĿž K'ƒƨƒĂη!ƒ

. Lĵŏ[ĐŽŽLĵƥƨŬƒ ; ƧT LĵhĞdžŎŗƨöĂ

:ɣηŽĂ ł TNĵhýĞĂ K'ƒƨƒĂη!ƒ 2 UĂdžŀ!ƍƨULĵ

ĦLĵŏ[ĐŽŽ!ƍýPƒƥ K'Dĵ

. Džžĵ K'ƥŽ

ƥƨŬŘ[ƒĂ Ŏ[ŢƧ ŎƼŇĴŢƧ ýηƧ!ƒ ĕŇĵ

ƥùoƒĂ ýĂDK'DĂ . Lĵŏ[ĐŽŽĵdžĵĂhƨnĵ DĂžŝƒ Σ Ğĵĵ ý‡

!Ğĵŏƍ ýĂPƥĞŝŝöƨ[ƙɣ DŽžýŏĂŬ Lĵdž Ħdž

ŎùƙĵƒÜƨĞžĵƒ lĵĦĵ Ŏ|ĵoo!ƒ Ĭ Lžĵdž DĦĵDDŽŎLĵĵĵnĴŢĂ

LĴDƥùžhŬƍÜŎhĿĵĵŽƧ[η ƥĿž K'ƒƨƒĂη!ƒ 2 UĂdžĿdžŝĨƙĕdž

DŬž !ƒ YĞ 2 ĕ‡ ĞĵƼK'öƧ ÜLĵŏ[ĐŽŎ5 ýŏĞŢDLƥŽ K'ŏr ƿ

!DŬž !ƒ Ư ƧDŎ5

ĞnĵöĞdž ƥùĴƑƨƒĂùηhŇĵƼK'ƍĂ Ğƽơ Ŏ5ĞĴĔöƧ‡ĦĂ

. Ğƽơ ĐĐĚč Dƥž ĞĴĞ LĂƼöĦŽŎ5ŎƦ[öĂŇĂ . ŎhƨƨĵƑ

ł|ŬLĵĵƑƒ ýöĂ‡Ăŗ Ƨĵŏĵnĵ!ƒĵ Ŏ5 LĂƼöĦŽDƥž!ƒ LĵĦĂ

ýùƙơŏýƒƨĞdž ƨùöDŽĵƒ ţ öùη!ƒ LĵĦĂ Ü ƨöDŽĵƒ Ğƽơ

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

Ĭ ù!ƍ ɤ Ƨù pǘ ƒ ŊǺDž ƕý ǂ ǸNjLǬ ǰơ ƥ dž ư dǮ

ǎ ǍƧŏ.lƧǯ Ţ !ƒ ýǒ Ţ ǤƘƒ ƺ ƥDŢž ŎƼ ɤ ǍNǰdž ǤĘ ǂ Tǿ

:ýǤƼ.. Ljǚ Ţ DƷ ƨơ LƸ ŊǤ ǂ Ʀ

.Ƨù ŋ ƒ ƥù Lƶ lƧǤ Ţ ǨƧ ŋ Ʀ ƒ ƻ ǂ Ƨ ǂ ƦDǨ!ƨǤž "

Ĭ ù DŽ ù ƶ ǂ ƒƧ ƚ ù Ţ ƑǤ ǂ Lǒ dž ǨLǤ Ǎ.. Ǥơ Ǥǰ ǨƧ ƥ Ǵ

!" DŽ Ʀ Ţ ƒǍ ƚ!ƦŎƼ Ǥǰ ǂ Ƨ

lǤ Ţ ǡdž lƧƧ ǂ dž Ƨ ǂ ƜƦǤ ž Ŏ ǂ ƒƦ ŎƼ ƥ ŋ DLǙ ƒ ǤǺ

.. Ǥơ

ǨǤ Ţ Ƶ DǤ ǄƧǤ ǤǰǍǤ dž ƼǤ Ŏ Ǥ ǰ ǨǒƧ ƥ!Ǎ

. lǤǤ ǰ

.Ʊù Ƥ ƥ ǤƤ Ʊ Ţ ƙ Ʃ ƥ!ƒ ŎƼ Ǩ Ǥ ƦǙƒ ǨǒƧǍ

Ŏù5 Ʃ !Ǥ ǤǺ ǕŎ Ǥž Lƶ ǨǤƧ dž ɤ ŋ ơƙ ŎƵǍ dž ǨLǤǍ

ƚ ù Ţ dž ǨƵ ƼǍ.Ʃ ƥ!ƒ ǨƧ ƥ Ǵ ƚ ǒƧƵ lƧǤ ƧƤ Ŏ Ƽ ƥ dž

Ǩ ǰ ǕŎ ƒ ǗDŽ ƺ Ƒ ƒ lƦǰ ŎƼ ý Ǎ ŋ ƦDŎ ǂ! Ǥ ǰ Ljǚ ƛ

. ƚ Ţ ƥ dž ƚ Lǒ dž Ƴ ƧƒǍ T! lǤǤ ǰ ƟǤ ƙ ƒ

"DǍ ǒƒ ƧǤǕ" ƻ ǍdžLƶ ƚ!Ǥ Ƨ ɤ ǂ DǤ ǒ Ž Ţ DǍ

ƥǍ ù ŋ ƒ ǤƧƨ ƥ!" :Ǥ Ƽ ǨDǮ ča ĐĚ Ǎ ǤǮ ǍDŎƼ ǨƧTLj

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

yùŗƒĂdž ù!ǫŮ ýĂŪƒ Ŋǀdžŧǁ ŊŋƌĞŊǀĿĐ ĞdžǰĂD

ĞĵŊĐ Žýŗƞ ŏŎǨƒ || ĐǨŽ !ǫ2 ƥŋǰ ĞǁǰŬ Lǫ˛ ơ!ƒ KƒƧdžǨ˛ dž

!ĞŋǁĂ

Ŏù5ƚù!Ăǀzdžǀǭ ù ƚZĂƧdžǯ!ĞǀdžƩ!ĞŋŊǀĐ ŎLǀǰƒĂ

Ʃ!ĞŀǰdžLǀǀdžýù˛ ơŏLǀdžý˛ ơŏŎǂ! ù Lǀơ Ūƒ Ư zɦ

K'ĞĂǂo!ƒ K'ĞƧǁLǀdžƒĂ˛ ŬLǀŎ˛ ĐŽƸ YĈĐŽ˛ ˛ ƤdžǰĂ

!Lǂdžǀ˛ ƥƧǂĐ ĐŽŬĞǰĂĕT ƥƧ5ĐLǀdžĂDŪŏǨz!ƒ

ĐĞŏĐƚŏǨz!ƒ ƚŋǰo!ƒ Ŏ5 ýdǂ!ƒ ƧŏŋǰŬĞK˛ ˛ ơĐǂ!Ă

.|| ŏdžĞǀĞdž dž ǂƧzdž

: ĞǰĂ Ŏ˛ ɈLK!ǂĂ

ţ, Ăùŏŋ Lǀǀdž, ŏùŋ ƧùǂĐ ǰĞŎŋƥĂĞƒ ï ƨĂ5LǀĐ

ƥƧŏƧoǨƒ

!ƚǂƧzdžLƸ ƒŅzhŎŋƥĂĞƒ ï ƨĂ5LǀĂ

:Ŏ˛ ɈLK!ǂĂ

ƚŏǨz!ƒ ƧŏƧoǨƒ K'ƒĂ! ĐƸƒ ƥĞƒ ĞĞǁK'Ă5˛ LǀĐ

! LǀŎ˛ ĐŽ' ƧĐƥzhŊǀzhǀĐŏĐƸĞǁK'Ă5˛ LǀĂ

:Ŏ˛ ɈLK!ǂĂ

ƥƧŏƧoǨƒ K'ƒĂ ţ, ƙǫdžŎdžĞƒ ĞĞǁŊĐ LǀĐ

[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible] :

"[illegible]
[illegible]
.[illegible]
.[illegible]
[illegible] :

- [illegible]
.[illegible]
:[illegible]

- [illegible]
."[illegible]"

[illegible] :

- [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

Ư ǷĘŢŋ|| ǷŅĳjKˁ ǒ ǷĺǽǂŬƳǷŏŀǻ ƒ ŎƼĿĴǷƥƒ Ɣ Ʀƞŏ Ĭ ư ďǻ

ǷƥǽŬĂ Ŭ Ʀǂǿ ł ƛƞ ǷǺǻŽƧƛǷǂk ýĂƞĳ ŬĂ Ŭƴ ƞĳ łĿĳ!ƊŬĂ

!Lĵǿǐ ƉƼŽƼ.. ýǷǷƧŀĳǷ ƧĂŅǂ ýƉǿǽ

ù łǒďǒƼǂĳ łǒǽǽ!ƒ ţ, Ăǒƞ!ƒ LƊǷǐƥĂ ƧĂƮ ƘƊLǂƊƊǻ

.. Lĵǿǐ ƉǿǽƤƥk ƨ Ăţ ù ĭ ƧƮ ďǽţ, ǒƞ!ƒ ǷĳǒƞĿĵǻ

. ƧƮ ďǽ ƥĂďǽĵďǿƥŬƒ Ĭ ƉǽǿǷĂ KĿǂĂ

!ĺ ƽŅǂƥƤĬ ƨĬ ||ŭǽǽƞƁĳ Ņĳ

:ýǷĂǽ ĺƥǽ Ĭ ƉǽǽďǒǿĳƦŅǾǷƛ KĿǷĂ

ŶƐĿǷƊǽǻ ø ĵǿˁ ƯǷĞ ˁ ƮƥǂƊǽǻ ƥƳĺ ďǽ ďǽǽ Č

ƊǽǂǷƮ ƊǽǽŪĳǷƳ ƥƬƊǽǽǽƨ ƞƮ Ņĳǫ ø ĿĳǷǽŅĳ

ĵǿƊǽ Ĭ ŬǷ ĵŅǽǽĵƊǽǽ ƨ Ĭ ƨ ƞŬǽǽƥ ĵǷǿǾ ŭǾƞ

ŮǷŅĴƊǽƊǽǷǷƯ Ĭ ƨ ĵƊǽǽǷ ŅǷǷƊǽǽǽǷƳ ƥǂ

.Ņǔ |Ɛ!ŅĴǷŅƊǂƥƊǷǽŅĵǽǔǐǂŅĳ

Ĭ øƨ ĵƊŅǽƮ ƽ ƊǽǽŅĵǔǔǾƞƯǷĞ ˁ ƮƥǂƊǽ łǷƽ Ĭ ďǽǽ č

ĵǿƊǽǿ| Ŀĳĺ ĭŅĳŅ ĵƊǽǽ łƨ KƐǷƊǽǽǽƦǷƔĵƐ

ƞǷǷŅǷƞǔƘ ĵƳǽƊǽŅĵ ||ŭƽ ĿǷǽƮƦŅĳŅƨ Ŀĳǿ

:ĿĳƳ ƅƦŶƐƊǽǽŽ

.Ɗǽǽ łƨ Ĭ ƨ ƞŬǽǽƥ ĵǷǿǾ ĵƮǽĿǷǔǾǷƊǽǽ

***

ýĂù'Pþ2 ĂƧùLJĂ K'ĞƃDPŽƟƧT Ŏ5ý‡ŏNjĬ ư dŽĂ

:ýĂ|ŏ5LJőƊ IJ5Ž ƨơ ƧƮ dž

Ŏ5Ğĝĵŏư ƿŎƦƒ DĞŰƒ lĵRNjþzhLJőƊ IJ5Ž!ǫK'þZ ĞdŽĂ"

.'ƧƮ dž ƿĂdžLJdžýƿŰƒ Ĭ IJŽŽĞĂ K'DƿŽĞŽK'LJ‡ĵ ÜlƧNĵƒ

LJůdŽŎƙƿĂùZ þùzhŏŎLJ!ĵ Ÿƒ þƷ || DdŽLƮDƧ‡RƮĂ

:lƧNĵƒ

ÞɤƧơ!ƒ ýĂPþ ƧƮ dŽƙƧƧƿýNj

LJĐùhĂ Űþù|ŔZDĞdžNĵƊŎ5Σ dŽD|| DdŽLJdŽK'hƧƙƿĂ

.ƠƊŽdž Ŏ'ĝŽƧ!ƒ ýPþƙƒ Ůǫ. ĆŐT ý‡! ƒþzRƮƒ Ĭ IJŽŽƧƮ dž

.2ĂƧU!ƒ NJK'ơƧT DŽ

ýùNĵDLJůdŽƊù η ƧŏĐþ ƒþZ LJdŽK'ƊŽŎLJƊĞŏDƧ‡RD

lþƙĵ dŽơčƧƮ ŎƙĞĝǫK'LJĞĂ .YĂư ĂdŽ Σ ƿLJŎ5LJőƊ IJ5Ž

NJLJƊK'ùƿĂƒ || !Ʀ Ŏ5ƧĂƮ RDK'LJĵ ĞdŽ .NĵŽŽK'LJĵ ĞdŽ !ǫ

!DŽƧdŽƱP!ƒ

ƒRùNjŎù5ĞNĵƩ ĞĞŽŋ K'þZ ŎLJƊĞŏDƧ‡RDýհ

!DŽƒĬ ƙơ ĞŽ5DD'ŽK'ĞĵLJ lƧTZ NĵŽĞŋ . YĂư ĂdŽ

ɤùLĞŰƒ LJDƮŽdŽ Ư zh ƨŏƱ LJZ K'ŏŽƮ þƿK'LJĂ

ƒĂLĞ‡Ă Ü‡þĂŋƒ ‡!ĞĂƒ lþĞƯ zhŏŎ|RDŎ‡! ÜLJőƊ IJ5Ž5

Lǰƀ̃Ăη LJhK'DŐĕǷ K'LĦjĂ .ýǒĵƑƧ̃ ǫƚ dǍǂơ! lƒĂLƒ DNǰGƙpĂ

. ƥzhGĕǒ5 ýǒĵƑƧ̃ ǫƇƒƨƨĂ Σ ǒƧ

LǺ̃ Ƣ́ ydǯƥƵĂdǮ! ƒĂƙƨĂ LǺDǯƶdǰ ƇǕƃNjƥƨ́ DǮ

.. ƚǒƥĂηǒĵ ƚ !ǂǺDǮǒƥT ƒƦǒƨƚ̃ Gƙ́pĂ Lǰǂ́ ï Ʀƒ

ýPƥ̃ùǒƻ Ăù̃ ï ƧT̃ dǰ̃ ţ ǒη!ƒ LǷ.LǺ̃ Ƣ́ Ǒ! ýǤĂ

! ƚǒǭǯƧ Gƥ̃ǒơ

.. Ǒ̃ Ƭƨ K'ƨƨNǰ

. ƻ ƧƵDǕ :NJK'DǮ

ƻ Ăù̃ Ă .DǂǒǮƨǒDǯƒ || ơư ǒƻ Ẵ :LǺ̃ Ƣ́ ýǤ_

Ǖ DƞǰƋ.ƇǮ5 Dǂǰ LǺƬ Lǒ̃ DǮƒĂDƤǮ Ƈƒ̃Σǫý‡ Dǂǰ LǺdǯǒ

3ƒƧù ƺƒ Ƈ́ýdǰ DǮƧƥ!ƒ NjLǺƵƥki Ʀƒ ƒƦNjDǂƵǒη LǺƥƨǒ

.Σ ǒǺ̃ !ƒ lGǰǑ5

:ýǺǒLǺ̃ Ƣ́ Ĭ ư dǮǮ

ƦK'Gǰǭj lƧTƶhLNjƧkýNj

:K'ǷŽ

!LǰƦ!ƒ K'DǮ

ƧηǰT Ǒù5 Σ ǒƧGhǑ5 || !Ʀ ƥzhLǺ̃ ƢhK'ǒƦƒ ƥĂ

ǕK'ù ư Ƨ5ƥ̃ù ǷƚLƞ!ƒĂ ǯƶ5K'Ƭhƥ Ɣ Ƨơ!ƒ K'LǂĂ .ƧhǒƦù

ƶ ĂƧù UĂ łù Lĝnĵƒ ýĂù ơ K'Ƭƒ [illegible] Lǫ Ž ƒ Σ [illegible]

.[illegible]

łǬ [illegible] !ƒ łLŋ [illegible] Ǝ5 LĂ Ƭ Ƭ K'ƥɳĂĂ

ŬĂǒƬ Ƨ Ʈ ƥǑ5

: Ǒ! ýĂǀǒ

!Ƚ[illegible]!ƒ y[illegible] ƥǒ ƨk ŮD . K'ǒ[illegible] ýNjù

.. čĕĐĕ łĮĵ Ƨǥ[illegible] Ƨ ɳ Ʈ Ǒ5 [illegible]

L[illegible]ǂĂ ù ƧĂnĵ Tdǅ Ÿ ƒ ƥù [illegible] ǑĂ

[illegible] P ƥơ Dýh[illegible] ù [illegible] kǑ5 ý[illegible] Ʈ Ű [illegible] LǮ ƥ LĂ Ƭ Ƭ

: [illegible] lƧǒ Ʈ łƥ ƧĂ Nǀýdǒ [illegible]

![illegible] - Ű [illegible]

łƥ ƧĂ ƒ [illegible] Σ ![illegible]!ƒ ƥǒ !ƒ : [illegible]!ƒ Ǒ! ý[illegible]Ă

!|| ǒƣ

.. Nǂ[illegible] Ʈ [illegible] Ǒ5 Ǒ Ʈ [illegible] K'ƶ [illegible] Ă

!Ɗ[illegible] Ă .. Ǒ! [illegible] LĂ Ƭ Ƭ K'ƥɳĂĂ

***

.. N[illegible] Ǒ5 Ƨ [illegible] Nǂ Ăƶ ǑĂ

Lĵŏůî ĿŏŠǾ Ƨơ ĎĜǾĿƑ Ňĵ‡ĵƦ ÖŏĜdžŏĵĵŋ ĿdžŢĵƦŏŽ

. Ĝŋĵpž Ĝǎ..

: ǍĵƑĵĭ ư dǎǍ

Ĝŋĵơ ýPpůk ĿĴ ƧŢ džĴĿ‡|ĎŏǎŽ|λ ĜĵǍ Ŀĵg K'Ŀĵ "

."Ŀĵŏî ĿŏǾ5‡ŏǭŽƧ

ƧĜŋƁĎƯ ùzhǎ ǍƧ ĜĵùzhǗƒ ƥžǒ || ĎǎŽĿĴĎƧ‡ƦǍ

yù džžǒƧùî ‡ù!Ǎŋ ƥzhĿĜǎŽ ĭ !gKƥƵ ƥK'ĿĵǍ .ƧŢ dž

ĭ ĿƵǍ ǗĜĵĎŋǍ ǗĜƒƥž!ƒ ĭ ĿƵŽŇĵüŋ ǑĿĜƥǍ .ƧǒƧǒŔƒ ţ, Ǎǒŋ

.Ňĵüŋ ‡Ţ Ĝ Ư zhĿĵƑĜdž

:ýĵǍ || ĎǎŽŋ!gKĵƦƒǍ

Ŀ|| ŔŢơǍĎƥ ƧŢ džƧĜƁĎĿĴƥŋǙ

:|| ĎǎŽK ƥŽ

Ďǎž ĿĵƵǍůî ŢĿdžŽ‡ĎŋĿƵŽ ư dǎĵ5.. Ǒǒŏ ƒƦŇĵ

.ƧŢ džĿdžĵƦĜƁĎyǭžĎĎǍ Ü‡ǒƧŢ džƥǒƧŋ ŢǒƥĎ

:|| ĎǎŽýĵ

ĎĜǗƒ Ǒ5ƧŢ džƧĜƁĎĿdžŇžǭž ĜŽĎŇĎ. yǭžƒ Ŀĵg -

ƻ ùî Ŀ!ĵKzƥǍ ƥƵǍĜdžĿĴýǍǕƒ ..ĿƒƧŋƁ ŀƧǒƤǕƒ

.Σ ĜĿƒ Kǒǜ

:ƥƧƱƦ ƒ Ɗǆ |ǒƥ || ƊǮK'ǂ Ă

- LƊLǰ UKýŋƽ.. lƓLƓǂǒƥƨhNJK'ƊǮƊƨǂ5Ĭ ƊǮǍ

ƂƔ u ʒǒƨ Ă ƾ ĂƧƓ

:ýĂ|ǒ|| ƊǮƥƧƱƦ ƒ Ɗǆ

- Ǒù5ƚǒƨ ǂ ƊŊǮǑ5ýƓǑTƒƧ|Lƒ LƊǑLƓƒ ƧhƂ!ƒĂ

Ĭ ùƊǮƾ ùƽĂǒ LƊ yǒƦ ǒŰ NǇ.ĭ ƧƮ dž LƓǆƨh!ƥ

Ű Ĭ ùƙơ .LƥǑùƮ ƊǮǑù5ƚǒƨ ƓƂơ ƧƮ džĂƤƥ

Ǒù5 ƺƒƧƽƒ ƥ ǑƽNƥǮǑƥǆǒĭ Ƙƒ ƫ ǒŋ!ƒ Ư ƁƨƙǑ

.lƧƱƓdžǒŰ Σ ǒĂ !ƒ lƓƥ

:ýƓƊǆ. || ƊǮK'ǂ Ă

- ƫ ǒŋ!ƒ Ƨdžƨ Ă 5ƓƊƓǆ. ƥƨǒƓǆǑTƒƧ|ƊǮǂǒĂ

ýùdžƘƊLƊĭ ƥùơĂ ƥƙùƮ džƓƊĂ .ƊƥǒLƊǑhƨ!ƒ

Lǰ džǑùhƥŰƒĂĭ ƥƓdž LĂ!ƒ ƥƧƊLǂ!Ă Űǒ Ăƒ dž

.ƧƮ dž

Ǒù5ƊǮ LǰƨǒƧ!ƒ ƥƺ ƘƓ Űƒ K'ƊǮǑLƊƓǒƊƨǂƘĂ

.LƓǮ Ǒ5K'ƤĂƒ || !Ƙ

- ýƓdž ĂùNjƧƮ džǰdžƒƧǒĭ Ƙƒ ýǂ :ƊǮ Ǒ! ýƓĂ

!LǰǮĂƱdžĂ

[illegible]

- [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

Lǰû Lŋ Ă ƚ ǒǻƨ!ƒ Ʃ ƥ!ƒ Lǰħ ý|Lķ ǒ ǾĶĂȵDý‡ǒNjǑr |ǒĂ

.. Ÿƒ ǅŽĂ Ǆǂ!ĂƱĂ

ýù‡ Ǵǰǯ ǖr ǒƚ ǒƨ ƮƮ ƚ!ƇƧ Ɣ Ķ‡ǒ LǰǴž Ĭ !ƍǷĂzǒ Džž

Ĭ ù!ƍ Ǵ ƞǰ ŷƮ ƨǒĂ ÜŇǰĂŋ Ŏ5 ǴǒǅŽŽ ý Ʈ ơ ŎĶƒ KǴĂŽƨǯž

čĕĐĚÜĂǒǴdŽ DĂǒƚ!ƇƧ!ƒ ľǰŅǰƧTLǩ ŎĶƒ ÜDĂǒƒ ƧǴǷD

LǰǑÙ ƮǄŽ ƧùơƚǒǻƨƧ!ƒ ƫ Ăǒŋ!ƒ ýĂPƥ LǰdžĂȵDýlƥí D

!Ǵǰ ž Ƨ

ýù‡ǒNjǴ ƞǰǂ ŎĶƒ ƚ ǒƨ ƮƮ !ƒ ƚ!ƇƧ!ƒ ľǰŅǰLƒĂƺ LǂǴĂ

:ýĂ|ǒ

. " LǰǑƮ ǄŽǴǴŋ ķ ŎĶƒ ƚ5Ʈ Ǵ!ƒ Ƨƒ ƧƮ ƮĂ ľǴǴǴǰ "

: ƚ ǒƨƮƮ !ƒ ŇǰƇƧ Ŏ5 ý‡ǒNjýǴĂ

ýǴǒŽLǰdžKǴ Ƹ Ƶ LǰdžĂĂơķ LǰǑƮ ǄŽ5 ƥĂƞǰ ƒ Lǰù

– ŸǴǰù!ƒ ƫ ǒŋ ĭ D lǴǴǴǰ ƫ ǒŋ ƨƧlĂÜLPǰT ƚKǴ Ƶ

! ŸǴǰƒ Ʃ ǒĂ DĂŋDǰŽdžLǂ lƧdž ľǰŅǰŇǂĂ

ƻ ǯĂ ÜŇǰǑŽĂ ľǴǴǴǰ ƚ Ʈ ƥ ŇǰƇƧ Ŏ5 ý‡ǒNjƟƧTĂ

Ŏù5|| ƧǰTƒ ĭ ǰƒ Ü ƥĂƞǰ ƽ DǴž Dǰ K ơķ ľǰƧ5DǰƥƵƍDž

.ƚǒǇƒ ƚǒdžž!ƒ Ɣ Ƨơ!ƒ

lĜiLĝĜnĵ ƚùŢ ƿĜĎžƚǒǥơŢ !ƒ ŅķĜƧ ŎƼýǂǒŅǰýǥĂ

ƚù!ĜĂƒ KùLĜ .Ƨùǒǂhų !Ŗ ýlƿK'Ţhųį5 ƒŊbzǥĂ ĜǕĎŽ

ƒŖùnǰ ƥùzkĜiŅĵƥ K'LĜĂ .ţ ǒŋ ĆĜLĵhŅĵƥ DǒŽƚƥĂnǰƒ

2 ĂƧùU!ƒ Ņĵ5ǑţŽkĬ ŖƒDĂŽƒ ĆĜ ƒŖǥĬ ƙơ ÜŅbZ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ

.ŅǰŰŢ Ă ŅbZ ŅƥǒLĵhƥŋĂ ÜŅĜhɷ

ĜǒLĜĂŽƧĂ ĜŰŢ ĂƩĂǒĂ ĜĜǒǥĂ ĜƧĜDŽǑ5 KĵFŢLĵĂ"

DǒŽ ƒ ĜinĵDŽ5 ù DǑŽKƒƧǂŢ zdžƥŰlƥ LĵdžǑŖǒƸĂ Ĝ ĂƧĂ

LĵdžLĵĂùŢ dǒžkdž YƧnǰLĵĜ ĜnǰǥĂ .yƒŰǓ!ƒ ĂDǑŢ ƙĂĜ!ƒ"

ɤǒĜDĬ DŽĂ KƒƧdžŢ dž lĜơ Ĭ DŽLĵĂƧlƥǒýǰƒƧŢ ǥɤĜ

.'ýĜ!ƒ

ljŖNjLĵdžƥơƒĂ ĜnǰƥLĵĜ NǰĵĤ ƥƒĂơ!ƒ K'ƙDƧŢ dž ƙơĂ

ƥùơDĜinǂDŽlƧǥùŢ ƚùZƨdžǑŖĵdžLĵĜĂ .ǑŢ ƙĂĜ!ƒ

!DŽnǰ Ŏ5LĵƥĜdž

Ư ǒulŰƒ Ƨùơlƥ Ŏ5ýŢDŽ K'LĜ ÜLĵơ!ƒĂ Lĵơ!ƒ LĵĂ

LĵdžK'ĜĜžhLĵǑŢ DŽƱƒĂT Ĭ DŽǑDŽƧPĜǓŢ Ăƙdž

Ĭ ù!ǥDŽLĵĂÜKƒƧdžŢ dž Ĭ !ǥŰƥŰƒ DŅĂǒÜyƒŰǓ!ƒ ljŖNj

.lĜĝĜnĵ 2 ĂƼŢ

!yŢ ƒĂƽĜLĵ DŽƧĂƥǒǑŢDŽƒ LĜ KƿĂƒ Σ ƺLĵǑĂ

!ǂǾǖdžƨ Ljdžǂƥơƒ Ă ƚƶƥ lƨƑǴ dĔ Ǥƒƨƭ Džǂ

ƚηùư ǴƥǂƵǨ dǂƥ ǗƑƘƥǈ Ljdžƨƒǵ ĎĐ Ǥƒƨƭ Džǂ

LĴƒĂƶǴƘùƪ ƒ ƥĂùnǂƒ Lǂ!Ă ÜǑLǴǾǂ!ƥ DĂǂǂƒ Σ Dƥǂǂ Ŏ5

.ƚηư !ƒ ƒĂ|ƥŏ

ƨƒƨƱ Ljdžƚ dĔư !ƒ KƮƥƪ dǂ LjdžǨǴǰƬ ƥƒƨǂƪ ƒ Dǂ

.ƨǂǴ!Ljdž

KǴhƨƨdžǂùƪ dǂ5 KƑƬLƉùƨǂPƦ yǖǴ dǂƒƨǂƪ ƒ Dǂ

.DǂǂŽ

ÜΣ ƥ|!ƒ Ŏ5 Ljƥǂơ!ƒ Ljƥơ Dǂ ƥơ DǆǴƘǂǾƮk KƮDƪǂĂ

ƚǂƥ dĒ "lƨǂư PǕƒ ǴǴ ƥ" lƨdžǂƪ dǂ5 ƒĂƥƬơ ƥĂnǂƒ LĴ

!ýƬƨƬkƨƒƨƱ Ljdžƨǂǂ

DĂǂǂƒ LǴǂĂ - Ljǂƪ ơ ƱĂƪ Ljdžǂǂ DǂƦ ýhƥĂ

ƻùnǂ Ĭ ùDžǂǴǂơ Ĭ !ǥýƪ Ă ù ƺ5ǕƒŎ5ƟǕ ƥƥ ƥĂƶĂdž

!ƚ ǾǴdǂƚǂƒƨƨ Kƒƨƒƨη ǴǂǂĬ DžǂƨPǴƥ

Ǵdž Ŏ ƥǂƚ ƥĂnǂƒ ƚ!ǂĂƒ ƔƮơ! ƚLǰƬ!ƒ ljƦNǰƥk Dǂ

ÜƔ Dǂǂ KơƘ Kƥƥ ýhÜƨƑǴ!ƒ Dǂ!ƒ " lƨPǴNǂǂk KLǂ

ƒƦǤǴǂƒƨǂùƪ ƒ ƚƶhLjdž DƥǂƒƚƥĂnǂƒ ƚ!ǂĂDǂǂƪ ŏĬ kơ

!ǤǴǂǂŎ5ǴƦdžǂ Ƭǂljƒj

***

ǇĂďĥǇŏ 2 Ă ţ DŽĔĔ ƒŔŋĭĂ Üƥŏǿ Ăƒ DŽƥDŽĔ ďĥĕƒ ł ǂ Ƨ ʐ ďĭƺ ǇĐ

. ĆŐT ĭ ĎĬ ĐŻŽ

:ǇĂĂǀŏĂ DŽĕĆƭĎĬ ĐŻŽ ǇĂţ ďĕĥƒ Ʊ ʓ ư ŏ ĎŽ

.ƒĂƥƶŖţ ƒ

:ýĂǀŏĂ ł ʓ ŋ Ʀ ďĭ KĞ ďŇ ĵĐŊ ĵoĎ Ʃ ďǯ ĎŽ

ýù ďǆďž ǴƗ5Ǵ Ǉû ďŽɣ Ƨ |!ǴƲĂŋĂŝĂƧ" lƧďǆŖ ďžŎ5

ǇǴǂĂ ÜŇĵ ʓ ųĵǕ ǇǴďǆǯĂ" lĵƒƥƶ ǥĭ ĐŻŽ ƧTĎł ŏďǆďĭƺ lƧǴŋŔĐŽ

ǇĵdžĎž ĐǆƨŋƒƒƲ ʐ ŋĭ ĐŻŽɣ ƧǴŋk ƒŖƥĎă Ƨ ŋ ŏ ý ďǆďĭƺ ƒŔŊĵ

.KĂďŽĂĐǴǿ ɣ Ƨ ơ lĵŔŊĵŀă Ƨƥŏ

. Ƨ ơ ŀ!ƥĂĐ. . ǇĵŏŢ ĐŽ

.. ƒŔŊĵǇĂƦʐ ŏ ƥĂŋĵƒĂ

:lƧŏƤŰƒ lƧďĐŽ ďĕĥƒ ýĂǀŏĎž

!...... ƒĂƥƶŖţ ƒ

الفصل الثالث

Ǒù lˤǻżǃƒ Ǒƺơ˥ ǃƒ ǍNjý‡ǒNjȽǰǕǰơ ƥǒǳǎdžȽǥ ǴǼǶ

ǴǴȽǮDǓù |5Σ ǒ̊ .ȽǰǓ˥ ĿǮǯ Ƨơ ƧƒƧ˥ ˥DƧ ˥‡ ǐ ǨƒƥǒơǍƒ

!ǴǸǒDǴǼǍƥǍ ýǒƥýhǗǮ Ƨơǃƒ ǉǨNjƥǼhǍ

ǂ ƒƥơǕ̄ƒǍ ɣ ǍƧơǃƒ ƧǍ‡DȽǰǓ˥ ĿǮǯ Ƨơ ȽǍ‡ƙ Ǖ̋ ƥƥǍ

ƥǝ‡ǩý‡hǸǼǰ‡ ǕƧƧǗ́ƒ ǂǒơǴȽǰdžý‡ǒNjǴǰǹ˥ ǑǨƒ ǂǒǳǼǃƒ

.ǂ ƒƥơǕ̄ƒ ǉǨNjDǮǰKȽǥ

ǂǒǥDŽơư ƒǍ KȽǥ ý‡ǒNjǂhǍƧƵǍ ǂǒ̃ƧƧ˥ džȽD|| ǃǨ

Ǒù 5ǂ ƒƥùơǕ̄ƒ ȽǰǴǳdžȽdžǴǰ‡ ǑǨƒ Ǖǂǒ̆ƺơ˥ ǃƒ NǰǮƧ Ǒ5

. ǸǰǯǰǴǰƒơǓǍ ǴǼǰƧǴǼdžýǹ˥ Ǎ ƥn˥ ƥǰ5ÝȽǰǓ˥ ĿǮŽ

ǂǒǥDǮǰǨdžǮ Ƨơǃƒ ýhƥǂUơǃ ƧPcǏ ƙơ ý‡ǒNjȽǥǍ

ɣ Ƨùơǃƒ ǉǨùNjýPƥùƙȽǰ Ƨ˥ džȽDù NǰǴǍǮdžǮ˥ ơ ù

NǰǴǳǍ̆ Ǒ5ý‡ǒNjƧ ˥‡ ƥǰ5KƥǍƒ Σ ǯȽǑ5Ǎ .ǂǒǳƵƧ ǂ|ǒƧǓǒh

Ƨùǒ̃ƧơǨƒ ƫ Ǎùǒ̆ ǂǃƨǹǰdžǴǰƵ NǰǮƧǍ ȽǰǓ˥ ĿǮǯ Ƨơ ȽƵ

ĞŃǌƥƨŏƯ ƶŀƥ ĿĴĕ ŎŔĴ ŧŏĜƤ!ƒ ΚĞĂƧ!ƒ Ơư 5Ă ŰŏƨƶƧ!ƒ
!ţ Ăŏƞ!ƒ ljŔNjΚŰĂŎhŁƵ

2 ùΤǂ Ĝƥǌ ŁƵ ƒŔùŏŎΡ ĜƼơ˥ ĜƑƕ ýǂŏNjʒ|ơĂ
ŧơĐƵŰƒ ΚĜĵùΤĂ ŰƨùƮ !ƒ ŧùφĂ ŋĵƒ ŎŎĐƵƒ ΚŰĂĜdž
ŎƼƧơŀƥ Ƨŀƨ ĿĴŎƮ ĐƼƵΡƥΚ ΚĿĕ ŎŔĴ ŰĵĂŋĵƒ ĿƥƞĜĵƒĂ
ýùǂ! ĐĜƙ ƥƥƶŔƮ ƒ Ĭ ĐƵƵĂĿĕ ƥĂŋĵƒ ĿĐƵ ĝǂĂ.ŧŏŔŧŏƮ
ƒĂĿĜǂĂ.čěĐĚ ĂŏĜdžƶđ ĐĂƶŏ.ƥĂùƵĂdž ĐĂŏƒ ŎƼČŐΤ
ĜŏƵŔƶĿĂƨNjƥ ĐƥĵĂ.ŧƨŏƮ dž ĐǂƧĜdžĐƨĜƥĐĿĂǂƧƥŏ
!Ĝĵ

ùù" ĐĂƶŏƒ ƧĜƥŰ "ŧŏơ˥ ŧ!ƮƧ ŎƼýǂŏNjý|ĿĂ
ýù|Ŀû ĿŏŎùƮ ĐƼƵƧơ ýĂΡƥ ĿdžýĜĕ YĂƮĐýhƥΚƧΤĿĵ
ŧùmĵƒĂĐƵĂƥƶƙùƮ ŏŎùǂ! ɣƧùƶĐƵƨùŏΡŰƒ ΚƒƧŏŔùơŔƒ
!...ŧŏΡƨƮƒ

***

ýűùΡ ljƧƵĜΤdžƞƧŔ ŏNjĜƥĂŏ ŎƼýǂŏNjĭ ŧư dĂ
:ŽƒĜŧƮ Ʈơ!ƒ lƧƙƒ ljŔNj

.NJǁⱠĞŽǮƶư !ƒ ƒRNjǮƶư ƊK'Lǂj ƒRǴdž ƧƥD K'ƪ !Ă " ù

NǅƧĂƮ RƊǕ ǑLǂǂĂ .ĂǒǴdž đ DǍǒ ƥƥzRƪ Ǖƒ lƧĂƨư Ĭ DǮŽ

.ǴǂƪǮ ƔƧo!ƒ ýPƥǒƪ

ĂǒǴdžĐ łùzdžǂƒ DǍžǒǑ! ăƧłǂƒ lƋǴdž K'LǴ DǮ

yƊǮŭƪ ƊǑùǂ! DǍǒƒ || !Ʀ Ǒ5 lƧNǴƒ Ĭ !ǫK'ƥZ ƫǫ.čĕĐĔ

ýPƥǒƪ .ĭ ƧƮ dž ƫ, ǒŋ!ƒ LƋNƥZDƧƟ ýĂLƒRǫĂ .ƻ pĂdž

ǑùTƒƧ|Lǂ K'ùDǒǑLƋƧǂRĂ .ýǒƒŽ ƮRǫdžŽ LǒǑƪ ƊŽ

.Ƨƥǒơ ƥǒƨdž ǒƧǂƒ K'Dǒ|| !ǂĂ ǕǴǴǒ

!Ư ǒLǂƒ Ĭ !ǫƯ ǒLǂƒ LǂdžK'ƧǒǮKƥƻ ĂƧU!ƒ K'LǴĂ

LƋù ƃùơ ƥNǴT ơpƧǴRƒ DǴdžDŽ ƥDǴĂ ù ƧǂRĂ

K'ƺĂ .ƥĂnǒƒ LĂpĬ !ǫƤƞ ƥp LǒDŽ!ƒ ǖǂ LǒĂ ǑLǒł ǒƥo!ƒ

Ǒù5YĂƦǕDýhpNƐTLƥpK'Lǂ ĭ Rƒ ýǴdž Ĭ !ǫLǒǕƒ ƧULj

.YĂư Ădž Σ ƺLj

NǅLƋù łhùƪ Ǵdž || DŽǕ5ù Ǒ! ýǴǴǒǂŽLƋƧǂRĂ

!ǴǒƃŽǴǒNǴƃlƥƒĂƒ K'ǴĂždž LƋƥlžǒ

Ǒ5ǴǴǴƒ Ƨǒ ƥp LǴ ĭ Rƒ ǴdžNǂŽRNjýhpĂ ... Lǂ!

!Ƥ ... ƥoƒĂ YĂƦǕDƧ5

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

Ǥǁ ǫǻƶǽŽŎù|ǯǩǍǻŪ ǰ Ǐ ƶǽŽǍǻǙ|ǻǪǥ!ƒ Ɨ ǬǯŪ ǰ Ǐ ǽǽŽɣ ǒɳǒǤǳǕ

!ƧǍǈǈǸǽǯǯŢ

ǊǨǳǲǈǈǳ ǳǳ ǳǳƗǓǌǤǳǳǳǳ ǫ|5Ǜ ǍǸǍǳǳ ǇǍǇǳǽǈǳǳŢ ǤǳǽǞ

ǳǳǳ ǫǳǳ ɣ Ţ ǈǳǳǈǳǳǳǍƨƶǳǳǳǳǍƵ ǳǍǒ Σ ǳǈǳǌǪǔǳŢǤǳǳǳ

ýǒŢ Ǥǳǳ ǤǳǳǳǞ ƨ ɳ Ǜǌǳ ǳǳǳǳ ýɳƨ!ƒ ǈǳǍ .ǈǳǒǪ ǳǳǳ5

!ƧǳǊǳǨǳ.. Ɨ|ǳǳǳǳ

Ǔǳǳǳ ǍǍ.ǐ ǍǸǍǳǳ ǇǍǇǳǽǈǳǳŢ ýǒŢ Ǥǳ ýƗǒǊǳɣǳ ǫǳǍ

.ǊǳǳǍǒ ýǒŢ Ǥǳǳ ǳǳǳǳ

: ǊǳǳǈǳýǤǍ

!ǳǍǒ ǇŐɳǒǤǳǳ .. ǤǳǳŐ ù

:ýƗǒǳǳ ǐ ǍǸǍǳǳ ǇǍǇǳǳǳǤǳǳǍǒǍ

ǈǛ ǫǳǳǳǪ ƒ Ǐ ù ǽǽŽǤǳǍ .. ǈǳǳǒƗ Ŏ5|| ŢǳŎǈǳǳ ù

ǤǳǤ5 ǤǳǨǳǳ ǈǳǳǳǳǳǤǤǒƨǳǳ ǳǳǳǳǤǍ !.. ǳǳǳǳǳǳǳ ǳǳǳǳǳǳǇ

ǈǳǳǳ Σ ǳǳǳǳŏ5 ǤǳǳǳǍ Ŏ5 ǤǳŢ ǈǳǤǳɳǍ ǫ! .ǈǳǒǪ ǳǳǳ5

.ǤǳǳǳɳǤǳǳƵ Ǩǫɳ ǍǍ .ǤǳǳǳǈǳǳǳǳǤǨŎƗ!

ǤǈǈǳǳǍ ù !ǳǳǳǳǳǳ Ǐ ǈǳǳǳǳǳǳǳɳ ǤǳǳǍ ǈƗǒǳǳǈǳǍ _

.Σ ǒǍ !ƒ ǤǳǳŎ5ǳƨǳ ǇýǳǕ ǽǽǽƨǫ!ƒ ǊǳǳŎǳǈǤǳ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

ɫùɼƨ5ƫ ǒǜɳ!ƒ Lǰ̈ǳƸǒǻƦ ƙKǰLǤ́ Ǘ ƛǳƺǒǤǰ́ ƖƧƒƨĂ

ɫùɼƨ5 ƥƒƧù5DƯ ƶhƨǒǻƦ ƙɫơƮ !ƒ ƖƧƒƨĂĂ !..ɫ̊Ʈ ƒƧơDŽ

!…KǤ́ǥ̈ŕ ǒǥƒ ɫǳĂǤǳ̌

ɫùơ5Ǥ́ǳƫ ǒǜɳ!ƒ ƾƧ5Ư ƶhƨǒǻƦ ƙɫơƮ !ƒ ƖƧƒƨĂĂ

!…ƥƒƧɳ!ƒ

Ǒù5ƫ ǒǜɳ!ƒ Lǰ̈ǳǒ́ǵ5ƨǒǻƦ ƙKǰLǤ́ ɫơƮ !ƒ ƖƧƒƨĂĂ

!… ƒƧǒĂǂ!ƒ ýƛǳƺƑĂǕƒ ƥɾ ɣƧơ!ƒ

Ʋƹơ! ƫ ǒɳ!ƒ ƾƧ5Ư ƶhƨǒǻƦ ƙKǰLǤ́ ɫǒDƑǳƒ ƖƧƒƨĂĂ

!…… KƒƧNǤ́ǳ̌ ƴơǳĂ DǤ́Ăǰ

!…ɫǒǤ́ǳƒƥDǐ !ƍƫ ǒɳ!ƒ ýĂơƙƒǂNj

!…ɫǒƧǂƮ ƶ!ƒ ƟĂƧ!ƒ ǤƑǵƤƍǒǤ́Ă

KǤ́ƬƥǤ́ǳ̌ LǮ ƻ ơƮ !ƒ Ǒ5KƬƨƥčĕĐē ƧhơǮƱ Ǒ5Ă

ýĂƥƒ ƥƥǻƦ ƒ LǮ ƒƦǒǂ ǤǕǂ KƶơƮǳĂ .DǮƦƒ ýĂơ ƖƧƒƥƒ

!..ƖĂ!ǤĂĂ DǮƦƒ ƥɾ ǤƥĂɱĂ ɫǒƨƶ!ƒ

KƧĂùƲƙ Ǥ́ǳ̌ !ƍƧĂƲƦ ƥƻ ĂƧƲ!ƒ LDýǒƤDDǳ̌ǂ!

ǰƦùNjǑ5ƧĂƥǐ DǑ! LĂǂǬ NǰǤ́ǒD||ƧƥDDĂ.Ǘƶ5Njƍ

!KƒƧĂƲƦƒ

DŽǀŶĞùhŐŽ ùǎŽĞƒ lŀŀĞ ƨdžĞďdžŀŻ DǍǒ KƒŖ KžǫǮž DǍž

KùpǍƒ || !ŖǑ5ţ ǒŋ!ƒ Ɣƨơ LǼĞƨDƗ ƒǒNjƩ ǒƨ ù Ÿƒ ǴǴƵ

ǑŁǂǍ . LǰǑ ĐƵǑ5 KƒƨǍǑŖǴƗDǮ ƨdžĞďdžŻǮK žǫǮžǍ ù

Ǒù5Ɣǎƨpùk ƨǂù ǂdžǰù dž NǰNjLǼ ƨdžĞďdž LǮK ƒǂǂ

!.. Ʊ5Ɣ ǎƨpkƨǂ ǂdžţ ǒƨz!ƒ

Lǰǂ DDǕž ǑùLǂǂ .. ţ ǒŋ!ƒ ƒǍ ƨdžĞďdž ƒŖNjƨư ơǍ

!…Dǰǰu

ýǴǍ Lǰ !Ǵ!ƒ Ĭ !ǫŸƒ ǴǴƵ DŽǀŶĞhǫKǴƒ ƨdžĞďdž Ǒ5Ǎ

:ƭ LǰǴu

ǑDǴǕǒƗ ƵǴdž Ǵ…Ħţ ǒƨz!ƒ Ǒ5lǍ!ƒ ƒǴǴLǍǂǒǴ Lǰdž

Ħ…lǍ!ƒ ƒǴǴLǍǂǒƔơǒLǰdžǰƵǴ

:YǴǴŲƒ ƒŖư Ǵ LǼ ǐ Ħƒ LǰNǴ pǍdždžƒǍDžǰǴǍ

!…ƟǍƨDǴǮ_

:ýǴǑǬ Ĭ ǍdžƒǍDžǂ!

ƨǰdžǍžƒu.. Ɣǎƨpƒ Ǒ5Dǰǒ Ų ƗǒŋhǍƱ YǴu LǰNǴ

.lǴdž

!…lǴdž ƨǰdžǴKLǂǍ

!..ƗƱǴhýǂhǰDžƨǴPŲƒ ypǍ ƒǂNǍ

***

KˆzηƧĂ .ƽůƱŰƒ Ϊ ĐŽČŐT Ǥɸ5Σ ď ǤίĮĶˆƥηĂ Ǘɣ ǒƧƥĸĐŽ

Ŋǀ! Kˆǫβ̄ĂÜɣ Ƨơ!ƒ Lǂ̸ƧĐΣ ǭƧ ƚĐǆdž ɣ ĐŽ lƧŊǂƒ Ϊ !ɡ

.. ǑĶĦŐŽƚɡǂ

:ǴƵ Đǆǂ̸ɦɸƽ ǒƧɕƒ Ŏ! ýɸ5

Þ.. ŊǂŎLǂžĂƵ KˆLǥ ù

.. ţ ǒƧz!ƒ Ϊ !ɡKˆƥƵ || !Ʀ ydǍ

Ŏù5Ă.ƚǒǂ KˆŰǴŖƒ ɣ ǒƧƥķƒ LǂĂ ǤǂηKˆLǂ L‡!Ă

ýùzηǒǴdžǴ ŋɸ5Kˆù hǴ Ü ĐŽŐ ƧǒƧǂkKˆhɸ lƧķƒ || ĐŽ

Ϊ ƥù Lǂ Kˆùʅ ď ŊĮĐÜƧǒƧǂKƒ lǂƦǌŎ5 KˆĐŽ Ǥǂηdž ɣ ǒƧƥķƒ

ŰĂ ƱǴùư ŰĂ.. Kƒƥùzdž ŰĂ KˆƒƧǂ ŰĂ ÜĐǂƚơĐŽ

! ...ƱǴù ƻ ʅ

!Ϊ ƧǒƧǂkŊǂơĎ ķƒ ƧǒŘƒ || !Ʀ ƥzh Kˆ5ƧƵ ƥ!Ă

.. lƧŊǂƒ Ϊ !ɡKˆƥƵ

Ư ù5Ƨ ŊǀL‡! Ÿƒ ǴƵ Đǆǂ̸ɦɸƽ ǒƧɕƒ ƚĐǆdž Kˆ hĐŽĂ

LǂǴ‡ƧĐʅ ǴƧ ƚ!Ǥ Ŏ5ƚ5ǂ dǂǴŊǀKˆǒķƒ Ϊ ƙơ . ŎĶĐǆdž

.Ŏ5ĂƧƲ ŊĮӨƧTĐŊǂ Kˆǫǂ5 Ÿɣ Ƨơ!ƒ

: Ÿƒ ǴƵ Ŏ! ýɸ5

!..ƚǂ!ƒ Ŏ5ƽ ƧĂƒ Kʅ ĐŽ KˆLǥ.. ŎPĐǴù

:Ŏ! ýǴDž

! ţ ǒƵz!ƒ ŎƼƧǍƧdǂ| [illegible] Ɵ [illegible] yǒǯƒ

.Ÿƒ ǴƲƵ [illegible] ǀǒdžƵǶǍ ţ ǒƵz!ƒ Ĭ !ǫKƿƵǍ

ýùƕ. [illegible] ǀǒDǍ [illegible] Ljdž|ƲƮ ƙ [illegible]

! ƖƧNǴƒ Ĭ !ǫ [illegible] ƳƧ ƮD

.. ƚùǒƧơ [illegible] ǒǍ Ƨùǒơ ƥodždž ǒƧƽƒ [illegible]

! ţ ǒƞ!ƒ Lj [illegible] Ǵ Ljdžƒ ǴƵ Uǆ [illegible]

.. Lj [illegible] Ʋ 2 ơƮ !ƒ ƚ [illegible] K [illegible] ƒ || !ƦŎƼǍ

! Ŏ [illegible] Ʈ [illegible] Ǵ [illegible] Ǎ [illegible]

Ĭ ù!ǫ [illegible] Ɩ ƧNǴ|!ƒ Lj ùdž [illegible] Ljƶ [illegible]

Kùǒ [illegible] Ǎ .K [illegible] ýǍƮ ơ [illegible] Ʈ ǴƤ ýǴ [illegible] Lj [illegible] Ž

ƚ ƥùơǒƒ [illegible] ÜƧNǴƒ Ĭ !ǫ Ɣ Nǂ [illegible] Ǎ Ljdž [illegible]

.ƚ!Ǵ!ƒ NJƟƧTǍ ƚǒƧơ!ƒ ƧǒǍ ýƕ [illegible] Üǒƒ ƧǍ

.Ž [illegible] Ƨƥơ ƥodždž ǒƧƽƒ K [illegible]

.Ɣǒƥùƙƒ LjƵ ĭ Ƨ [illegible] ý ǂ ƚ [illegible] ýǍ [illegible] NJKơƧTǍ

[illegible] Ɣ Ƨz!ƒ Ư zƕ [illegible] NJK [illegible] Kƒ [illegible]

! D [illegible] ŎƼ [illegible] Lj [illegible]

:Ƨƥơ ƥodždž ǒƧƽƒ Ŏ! ýǴ

***

Gÿʅ hǚdžÕù 5Ɨ [illegible] K'LĢ Ă . LƒpĂʅ !ƒ Lʝdžƒ [illegible] K'LĢ

! [illegible] Ă [illegible]

ăƧŪ Ü [illegible] !ƒ ljrnj Ɨ ǂƨdž [illegible] ýdž [illegible] K'ƧƧpĂ

Lʝdž [illegible] ù Tdž [illegible] nj K'ƒ [illegible] Ă . ýdž [illegible] K ƻ [illegible]

. [illegible] dž [illegible] dž !ǥʈ [illegible] !ƒ

!.. Ƨnj [illegible] K [illegible]

ƽù [illegible] !ƒ Ĭ ù [illegible] K'G [illegible] Ă K'Ǘ [illegible] !ƒ K'ƺpĂ

! Ɨ [illegible]

ǴƱP [illegible] ʅ Ƨdž [illegible] K'LĢ [illegible] !ƒ L [illegible]

! Ɨ [illegible] K'ƒ [illegible]

.. lƧdž [illegible] dž [illegible]

Ĭʅ Ădžƒ [illegible] LĢĂ K' [illegible] Ƨ [illegible] dž Ƨ [illegible]

! lƧ [illegible] Ĭ !ǥ.. Ɨ [illegible] !ƒ YĂƞƧ [illegible] |k lƧ [illegible] ƒ K'LĢĂ . [illegible]

.. L [illegible] Ĭʅ Ădž [illegible] K' [illegible] Ă

: NJK' [illegible]

. Ɣ [illegible] ƒ Ʊʅ Ă Õ5Ɨ [illegible] !ƒ

Ǵnj [illegible] .. [illegible] Ɣ [illegible] k : [illegible] Ĭʅ Ădž [illegible]

! [illegible] Ɨ [illegible] !ƒ L [illegible] Ă Σ [illegible] Õ5Ɣƒ [illegible] ǥ [illegible] .. Ɨ [illegible] ʅ hƨ

.. ƚŽƋ ŁųŝNjĢƒ Ї !ǫlƥĂƶDŽǀǿŧ ƒ ƙƊƥƘ ƒ

Ɣƒ Ƨùư ǥŧùdžDKùnĵĵ.. ƺùčƠƒ ŎƼŎNjƓŁǯĂ

! ..Σ ďĂŀƥ

.. ƒŘŧNĵĂ

Ї ù!ǫKƥƶƼŬƔčƧƥƘƒ Ƨŧ ƶdžƼŎ! ýďž Ǚ NĲKƥƞĂ

!ї Ƨƞŏ ƓŁžŋĵDĿĴ ýĂƓDĿƧNĢƒ

ĂùNjƓŁdžNĵ ýĭŢDăƏ Ɣ ƓƤ ŧƑƓŁžĿdžƷŧDKŀŀĂ

ĦƯ Ƨǯƒ

- ! ƔčƧƥƘƒ : Ŏ! ƒĂƚƓ

- . ýĂƶdžčǫ Dǖŧ ƒŘNj: KƊƥŽ-

- ! ŧƮ ƦPdžKƓŋ!ƒ ýĭ Ŀƶ Ă : Ŏ! ƒĂƚƓƒƦƥPD

. ƥdžƶdžǰ!Ʀ ƥƶŁƥǰǯ Dž

- : NĵƼŎ! ƒĂƚƓĂ

Ħ|| ƘƑŎŽNĵƥù

ƓŁdžŎ! DƋƥžƥǫǙǥ.. ŎƘƑŎŽƥƥƠDĿĴ ýčŎƦ DǕ : KƊƥŽ

ĦĐŧƑŎŽĂNj

.. KƒƧĂƒƥďž KƓƒƥƓŁžƥƶĂ

: Ŏ! ƒĂƚƓ

***

.. KƿĂƒ Ư ƶhƨƥŏơ Ǩǂƫ Ă

:Ŏ! ýǤDž

ĭ Ǵη ǴTǴŎTƒƨ|Lǰ ƚ!Ăƥ.. ăĂƒĂdžǴyƍƷƒ ù

ƒƦǋNJýƿĂ Ŏƶdžǵǵk.ƫ ŏη!ƒ ƚƪ Ǵ Ŏ5 YǴƶƒ Ƨư σŏ

.Ďǂ!ƒ

.. YǴƶƞŮƒ Ĭ !ǫKĥNjĂ

.ƚσƒƧƪ hŏKǴĂƶƶǊNJăĂƧDŎTƒƧ|Lǰ DǴƶK ƪ DŊĂ

: ŎTƒƧ|Lǰ Ŏ! ýǤĂ

! ýĂPƥƒ ǴƶƷDŏŏƚŏƨƶ!ƒ ýĂƥƒ LǰhǴǰĂdžu

.... ŽŏĂƱ DǷƶDž

ƻ ƑǴP ŎLǰƨĂƪ ƙŸƒ NǴƶƧ NǰǗNǴǴƶƨhDLǂǴĂ

Ǵƪ Ǵ ăĂƪ ƙƻ Ăƪ ƚ!ƪ dž LƪǰƙƶŏNǰýǤĂ .ƚŏDžƒ Lǰdž

KǂǴuTŮƒ LǰĂ .ýPƥƙ ƻ Ăƪ lƥƙdž DŏǅƒLǰĂ .ƚƶƨƪ hu

! ǴƦơ ŽoƶK ƪ ŏĂ .ƚƍ Ǵ lƧNǴdžƨηdžǇĂǂƦ

.. ŎƒƒƧ ýǂhǴƶƶƧ ƒƦŏƧ|kKĥǂĂ

.. Ƨƫ !Ǵŏ! lƧƥǴ !ƒ ƧǵĂŬƒ KƶƱDDž

.ƫ ŏƶ!ƒ Ĭ !ǫlƧƑǴƒ Kĥǂ ƧĂ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

- [illegible]
- [illegible]
- [illegible]
- [illegible]
- [illegible]

- [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

الفصل الرابع

ýù‡ǒNjLǰǪĴơ ƥơǆdžƨǒǂǂƒ Ǒƽơʈ !ƒ ɣƘǂ!ƒ ƥǤź ƒƦǤdž

ɣƘǂǒ ǕčĕĐĔ LǰǬʈ ĐƼǯ Ƨơ Ĭ ĐźŽKʻƒĂǪĴ Σ ǆĚ ƧĂƨdžǂǂƶ ʋ

ǀƦù NjƥùƶƕĂ ǤǴLǅĂ ýƕNjĐƸž .ǤǅǯKʻǤǆĂǒ ƥǫƞ Lǆž

ýǒʈ Ǥƙt, ǤźĂ ǕĐĂǯƒ ƧǤƥǕ" ǤǂǂĚʈ ź ǅʈ ƒƧdž ǂǂ Ǖɣ Ƨơ!ƒ

ǂ ǒƤǒƧǤƗ ǒƽơʈ ýƑǤƧ ǤǅǯɣƘĂ Ǖɣ Ƨơ!ƒ

.. Ǥǰ ƽ ǈǤǆĂǒ Ǒƽ

.. ýƒǒʈ !ƒ ƒƦNjǐ ĐźǯǂǒNjɣ ǒƞǒ

: ýĂǀǒĂ

ɣƧùơ Ĭ ùĐźŽùĐǯǂ Kʻƒ ĂǪĴ Σ ǆĚ Kʻư ǆǂƥ KʻǂǂǤ"

.. ǀƧùǒdž. ƚùĐǯǂ .. ƚùĐǯǂ Kʻƒ ĂǪĴ Σ ǆĚ .. LǰǬʈ ĐƼŽ

ƽƑǤǀơ KʻùǀĐǯǂĂ .. ƚư ǆǂ KʻǂǂǤ ǀƧǒǂ ƧƒƧʈ ĎKʻƧƞĴĂ

KʻǂǂǤ .. ǀƧĂʈ ĐźǂǂdžɣǂĂƞ KʻǂǂĂ. ǀǫǂǆǂKʻǂǂǤ ƚǂǒNj

"! ĐǯǅƵƒ ǕƍǤǅǂĂƥǒǕƽǕǤǂĐźǯʈ ƙýǕƵƒ

:NjǤǆĂǒƚǂƕǒƽýǂǒNjýǤĂ

LĐyǒǬʈ ĎǑǂǂǂǕ ƒơǕƒĂ Lǂdžƒ ƒƦNjƥƶʋ ƨźĎĐǂĂ"

ǕǤƞǂǂ ǤǂdžƚʈǀǀƒăĂƧǕ ǕơƥǤƒ ĐǂǆǂơƥNjǂ ƻ ƥĐ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

:Nǩǿďǡŏ Ŏ5ý‡ǒNjýǍ|ŏ

ɣùηŏLǇ ǐ Ʀƒ ýǍŰƒ ƾơ!ƒ ƥNǦ LƊǐ ƋŽƻ ƪ ƈǄǍ"
ƧƒƧùƪ Űƒ ǴLƺǏŽǍ ÜƧƥùƮ Ơùǥ Ǎ ÜƥŏƧǨƒ ƊǴƻ |ŏLƊ
!"ƊǯǐǑ LƊƊǍƒ yǒǑƦ ŏŰ ÜǈƼƪ ǒơ!ƒ
LƊ- |ƧùǒƸ LǇdŽƻƗD- yǒǑƦ ŏǐ Ʀƒ ýηƧ!ƒ ɣNƦƥ!
ƚ ƒƥùơŰƒ Ǐ ùƋŽƧǍ!ƒ Ư ƶhŎ|ƊǑŽƊǍ ÜƊǯ ƚƮ |!ƒ ǎǍƧŏ
ýǍùƤƥ Ǐ ùƋŽÜ|ǸƪƮ!ƒ ƚƊǯŽƊǯ ƒ Ŏ5K'ƶƥǍ ǑƦƒ ÜhǒNƦ!ƒ
!…LǇǑƪ ƊƼǮ Ƨơ Ǐ !gǐ ƧƮ dǯƫ ǒη!ƒ
Ǒùdǯƥ ƥǍùdǯdǯu ýùηƧ!ƒ ƒƦNjƻ ƥǍdǯƲŏƻ Ǎƪ !Ǎ
!… ƒƦǑƥ ƒƦƹ! ù ǑƬƒƧ|Ʀƒ
ƚùƪ ǴǯƵ ù ǑùƬƒƧ|Ʀƒ ŰǍù ơƥƧǴƦƒ ǐ ƥùηŏLǇǍ
!.ýηƧƊŽǇ dǯƙdǯ
ɣơǴƮ LǇǴ‡ ù |ƧǒƸ ýhƥù ǸǕLǍNjNƊɣǒηƶ!ƒǍ
Kù LǇǍ ÜLǇǑƪ ƊƼŐ5ƚǑƪƶƧ ǴƥơƧƮ dǯǍƤƥ ƊƥŽ ƚǒƧƲLj
YǴLǇƒ LǇ ǴƥǑǯ Ǒ5ƊǯÜƶƯǴƚơư ƒǍ || !Ʀ Ǒ5Nǉηơ
! ǴǉýηƧ!ƒ
YǍư ǍdǯƒƦNjǑ5lƧdǯLǇdǯƻƗƊƊǯǑ Nǯƪǯ ǑLǇƧ‡ƦƊ
..

***

Lʖu dž ù [illegible] ÜǸʖ Lʖýɳ Ƨǃƒ ƒRǸʖ LʖƁ || ǃR ydž

Ă [illegible] dž đ) ýù Ț [illegible] ƒ [illegible] Lʖ dž [illegible] ýɳ Ă ÜƒRǸʖ Nʖ Ă dž

ǃNʖ [illegible] ƒ Ƨ ǯ ƥ (čĕĐĚ

ǃ.. Ƨ [illegible] ƒ Ĭ Ț ƥ Ď ǃ ǫ.. Lʖ [illegible] ƒ Ĭ Ț ƥ Ď Lʖ dž

Ŏù 5 ŀ [illegible] ƨ [illegible] ơ ţ ǒ ǃƒ ýĂ P ƥ [illegible] dž [illegible] 5 Ơ [illegible] Ă

Lʖ dž [illegible] Ă Ü [illegible] dž Nʖ 5 Σ ǒ Ƨ dž ƒ Lʖ [illegible] 5 y [illegible] Ă Ü Lʖ [illegible] Ž

.Nʖ [illegible] Ă Nʖ [illegible] Ŏ5 Nʖ [illegible] dž ǃ ǫ Σ [illegible] Ă [illegible] Ĭ ư dž [illegible] Nʖ

Ħ ƥ ơ ĭ [illegible]

LʖĎ Σ ù ơ Ď Ü [illegible] ƒ Ď [illegible] ù ơ ƥ Nʖ ƒ 2 ƥ Ď [illegible] Ă Ŏ Lʖ [illegible]

Nʖ Ƨ [illegible] Ă Ÿ ƒ Nʖ [illegible] ǒ ù Nʖ Ă Ü ǎ Ƨ [illegible] P Y [illegible] P ƥ Ŏ Ț ƒ Ƨ | Lʖ ƒ

ǃ.... 2 ƒ Ƨ Ŭ ƒ ŀ ǂ Ă [illegible] dž Ƨ [illegible] dž ǒ ư Lʖ [illegible] ù

ƒ [illegible] dž [illegible] Ď Ů Ü [illegible] ƒ Ď [illegible] ơ ƥ Nʖ ƒ 2 ƥ Ď [illegible] Ă ... Lʖ ǂ ǃĂ

:ýĂ ƥ Ď LʖĎ Lʖ dž

Ď [illegible] ǒ Ă [illegible] ù Ț dž Lʖ u dž Ŏ Ț ƒ Ƨ | Lʖ ƒ Ŏ ǯ ǒ Ů Nʖ [illegible] ƒ RǸʖ Lʖ [illegible]

ǃ [illegible] ƒ

Ü 2 ƥ Ă [illegible] ơ ǃƒ l Ƨ Ă Ț ǃƒ LʖĎ Ü Lʖ Ŭ ƒ ƥ [illegible] K ơ [illegible] Ď ǃĂ

ù 2 Ă Ƨ U ǃ ƒ Ă ǎ Ă ǃƒ Ư ǯ h Lʖ ýh Ü Nʖ [illegible] P Ŏ5 ŀ ơ ư ƒ Ă Lʖ ǂ K Ď ž

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

***

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

Ü‡ŏǤǴŏƨŀɧ‡dǺ‡ơ!ƒ YǤǵǧž‡!Ǵ Ŏ5NǥǤǾƉžǾ2 Ţ LǍ Lǿǚdž
.KǤǵǰǰ ljƦNjǵƑ ‡ŏƋž!ƒ ýǍǭƒ Ĭ ƊŽǯŋŏ
LǍƿ ŎTƒƨ|Ljƒ ǯǤǴP Lǭdžƨ|5ƒ ljƦNjý‡ŏNj|| ƨŏŮǍ
:ýǍ|ŏ5‡ŏƊǨ
ČŮǍ Njǫ Njǩŏ LJǅL‡dǽ ƦƒljǤǨŮƒ KʻƦƊǯ ƨǤǨƒ Lǥ
‡Ţ ƿǤƊž. ‡ǯǔǍƒ ŎLǤƨŮƒ /‡ŏ Lŋ!ƒ ŎLǤǴŏƨŀɧ ǤǤǵǯ ǍƉŽ
ŬǤnǯ5 LǮ ǤLǤǴŏƨhKʻǯǍk ƒƦǫ Ÿƒ ƿǯ || ƊǯŽLǤǵŮƒ y5ƿ
.ƒǭƊŸƒ ƿǯ || ƊǯŽĬ !ǫKʻƊŽǍ‡LǤǵŮƒ ljƦNjLJǩƦƊŮ ŎL5
|| ù ƦǯŽ ǤǴƿǨƒ ‡ù LǴǯdžŎù5ù ƊǯǔŏKʻƒƦƨ‡ƦƊǤǍ
ýǤǯT!ƒ Ĭ !ǫƒƦdžǍǤǯLǨTŽ ƿžhǰ ƊǯŽ Kʻƿơ ŎǨƒ‡zǯǍƒ
|| ƊǯŽƨŢ dǯ‡ŏƨǤƦ Ůƒ lǤǵ!ƒ ƨ|džǤǵLǤǤǍ. LǤǯ Lǯdž
ƦǨ ŬǤǵlǤǵ!ƒ ljƦNjƨ|džŎ5Kʻŏƙƒ ŎLǮƨ‡ƦƊ‡ ŏơ..Ÿƒ ƿǯ
. ‡ŏƋž!ƒ ‡zǯǤǵ!ƒ LǵǯƊǯŽ Lǯdžƨ!ƒ ƿǯ
:ƊǯŽ Ŏ! ýǤǍ
Ǵdž5Ÿƒ ƿùhǯ || ƊǯŽýdžǯk LJ|| LǯǯƨƊKʻLǯ ƿ! ù
Ĭ !ǫýŋƨ!ƒ ƒƦNjǯŢ‡LLJý!ƒ Lǯdžǫ.ƿơ Ĭ Ţ ƿƊĬ !ǫNǯk
ŮǫƨŏƊŽǤǴhNJƨŏ ČŎT ŮǍ ŬǤǍƿǤǯŋ Nǯ Lǫ.ƿžhƿơ
ƿžkŮ‡LǤǵŮƒǍ. Ĭ Lǯ ƿƊžŢ dǯ.NJǤǵǯǍž5ŏ Ŏƙƒ‡LǤǵŮƒ

.ŇĵhơĈÅùLķĜĿÅžŏ KʿùƮ ǒ ÜKʿĜǿĵűŋ!ƒ LɉdžŽǿűudžƛǚƛĬ ĐžŽ
..ƫ ǒûŋDʾĵĚŖĜɥŋǒǥĬ !ǫƧƮ dǯŇĵĶƙƸĐǯžƒŖŇǰLĴDƲ ƧŞ!Ǻ
ýŋƧ!ƒ ĈĜʿ ƧŖ ƒ LĴDƒǍǫŋk ÜǍơLǰƒŖŇǰ ĐžǕ kơ Ƨdžƒ ƒǍŖP
.ýƒǍơŰƒ KʿLǿ Ĝǻǯ žƮ dž ơƒƾ ǂ|ƽƮ
ƥǯ ǁ ĐǯžydžǞǿƧ ĈǯdžǍƣ ǍdžKʿƮ ʿƮ dǑLǰĴDƧǂŖǍ
ƧùƮ ƿǑù5 ù ŇĵƙǂĜdžĐžǕĈĜż!ƒ ƥżhơĈdǩKʿƒŖù Ÿƒ
Ǒùƽ PǒLǰǂǒDʾǯŇĵǰơǮDĜǍ)ǁ ĐǯžLĴDKʿƥŋǍǍ ÜLƒƧƺƺ!ƒ
ǍĴƒŖǑǂ lƧǂƽƒ ljŖŇǰLǯ ƻ ƧżǒŇĴĜǯǕĜ ŇǯǍĐDʾžƒŖƮ
! ǻǒƥŽ

***

.. ǑTƒƧ|Lǰƒ ɣ ĜǾP Ĭ !ǫă ƧPĐlƧdǯǍżLj
Σ ùĐǯdžǒƧùƮ !ƒ ǂƮ ĐǯǑ5ÜƧƮ dǯƒƧƨǍ Σ ǯƧ ýǴ
:ï ƧƮ dǯɣ ƒǍǰƒ
ĜǰƒǍ .ǂǒƨż!ƒ ýǍƥƒ ǂżǒǿ! ă ƧPDKʿĈĐžKʿƥżǰƒǍ
LǍƧǂŖǍ .ƻ ǍƧU!ƒ ljŖŇǰǑ5ǂ!Ǎƥ ýǂ ŇǯžkLĴDɣ ŋǒĜdžĐžŽ
Ňǰǒŋ ƻ ù!DĐČ ƻ ƧƮ Ĭ ĐžǕDǯǍ ĐǂDɣ ƒǍǰƒ KʿƒƧƲ ơ
.ă ƧùPĐlƧùdǯŇǰŋ ƻ !DĐČ ƻ ƧƮ Ĭ ĐžǕDǯǍ DǯlƧdž

K'LG̋ǂĂ .ă ƨPDǾȂǆȌdžǍǕǸǋ LǺǾdžǒư |D!ǽǆdžǂƒ ǭǷ ǴǂĂ
ǑùNǺ ƚǒȅzƒ ƚzǒǹƒ K'ǴǆLǑ5ǴǨ ơ ƚǕǕLǰƨ dž ơ
.%ĐĎ
ƧǓPDă ƨPǕƒ K'ƒǭZǴ dž LǆdžƧ džǊǋK'ǒǿǴdžLǆǂĂ
K'ùoƒk Ƨù džǭƨƒ Ăù džýù ǂ ǴǆưĂ ǭĂ ÜƩǴǿdž ǉǨǋLǆdž
LǱ LǆǂǴ ǭƨĂ ï ĸƒ ƟǕ !ƒ LǤ|| !ƦLǆdžǂDýĂǭĂ.DǂǭƧ k
.Ƨ dž ǒƧǓ
ƔǴǓP LǕ džǴǋǑƨ|ƽƒ ǉǨǋ|| ƨǒǕ ýǂǑǋLǂ!
: ýĂ|ǒ5 ǒǆLĂǭ ƨǒǓP!ƒ ǑTƒƧ|Lƒ
ĸƨ'ǋǨLǴ2 ƨƵDĂ ï ǭĂ5.. K'5ǭ ǑǨƒ ƩǴǿdž ǴdžƧ
ýǴ džƔǋǨLǴĎ !ǥLǂ!Ă ÜK'z5ǭ Ƨ džǆDǊǭ|| TǕ ï ĸƒ
ĸƧ džǊǭ5ǭ ï ĸƒ
LǕǑĎ ù!ǥƨ ƨƵDǑLǭ5.Ƨ džǊǭƨĂ ï ĸƒ ƟǕ !ƒ ǴdžƧ
!…ƔǋǨ
ĂùNǺ ÜǴ̃ǹǭĂ Σ ǭ!ƒ Ǒ5Ƨ džï ƧǂƟz!ƒ ƽơǒdžǴdžƧ
ƚùLǰ! Ǒù5LǕƒ Ƨù džƔĂǭǆdžï Ƨ džDǿ Ƶ ǑTǴǂ!ǭ
LǆdžƩ ǭ!ƒ Ǒ5ĂǋǺ ÜĂǂT LǆdžǂDĎ |ǕǋǗǑǂƧ ǥƚzǓǴdž
!…Ƨ džLǆdžK'DǑǑǨƒ ƚơDǕƒ

ljRù NjNljȃ �religijuă ƧùǒLJDǴǵpĂ ï ƧȚ dǅ DǴ Ʃ Ɣ DŽĂ

..........ǴǆƧǒpǴ ǴǍ Ü ǂoȚDǄǆ

: ǂzǒɳʒhýǴǏ ǩơ •

!!!.....!|ïǁǴǴǴDŽDǑǨǆ ǂoȚDǄǆ ǑNjljRNjK˚ȗ ǒ •

.ʒù ǒƧƱ!ǆ ǑƼýǴǨ ǆ ǷǂoȚDǄǆ ljRNjDǆdžLJDƧnljĂ

ʒĂȚ !ǆ ǑƼƧnljǨ .ƧȚ džǴDŽDǑǨǆ ǂǒĂ!ǆ ʒ ǴǴǴ KˈhNjĂ

ǂùDǄNjʒ ǴǴ LȷǴ nljǆǴpù hK̆zư ĂĂ .ʒǒƧƱ!ǆ ǑƼǴǴĂȚ !ǆ

!.....ǴĂohdžýǴ ǴǴdž DǴ..ǂư ǒƧdž

: NǴP ǑƼǑȚǆƧ|Lǆ ýǴĂ •

hǿǂǴDŽNjDǴDǏǆ ǂz ï |ǆc!ǆʒ dǁNj

ÛǁȚ ǂǆü üȚ ǂǆhDŽDǴNjǁDǴNjhǂ ǴǴ

8Njǆǆ| ǆ ǷǿyǁDžĂǿ|ǁǴǿuǗǆ ǀ ǂǆ|ǁNjǆž

ĂǿǂY DŽǆʒNjǗ !ǿNǆNǆ DǴǴDǴǆu

!NǆǒïǴNJǿNǴNjcüǿ| 8NǴǴNǛǆ ʒ|ǆ

.ǏdŇǆNǁǀUȚ|ǀ8Pj hDŽDǁǅ

.. ǂDǴǂoɳǴ| lƧdǅ dždǴdǅ K'LǴĂ

.. LǴǴ YǴ !ǆ LǴĂǒȚ DǴǴ ǀƼ

.. DǴ!ǆ ƧǴǴǆĂǴĂ

.. ǂǴǒƧdǄǆ ǂdǂo!ǆ ƧULǆĂǴĂ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

Lǰŏù ˛ DŽŎ5 Lǂk Dǆ DǅŎǆ ł dǍƒdǆ ljŘNjLD̆ DǅŽ2 ˛ ƈ
Ŏ5ƀƒƧŋ!ƒ KƠƒ5˛ Ĭ DǅŽƓǰK ƀhŎƦƒ lƧƒƧơ!ƒ Σ ƽljǰÜƓǰ ƽ_ǰ
ƒŘù Nj.. łù dǍƒdǆ| ƓLNjǰKù Lǂƒ ƀù |! .. łďƧz!ƒ DǅƒǍz!ƒ
!...ŎƠ˛
ƀǍù ŋǰdǆłù DŽdǆ !ǥƒŇD ˛ ƙDǆ dǍƒdǆ ljŘNjLǂ!Ǎ
.Dǆdǆ
ÜǂƧdǅ2 ƀǍdǆŎ5ƧƛD2 ˛ Üƒ ydǆ dǍƒdǆ ljŘŋǰ LǂŏDǍ
ƀùŏŏk Lǰù Ƶ KƒŘù !ƓLǰƓǍƧk ýPkŏ DǍ ÜǂƧdǅýPkk DǍ
Ŏù ŋƙŏǰ LDýùhƀÜýƒƒƧ ˛ ǥDƓh2 ƧKƒ NǅýďƀƒǍ .Dǆ|Ƙƒ
!..KƓƓ ỵư hƀLǰŏ˛ DŽ DǅŽŎLƓƧhƀ ɣƒƦÜǰƒ
ƓŋƒǍDŽLǰdǆKƓǍÜƒ LǰdǆKƀǍ Ŏ5K ƽP ǂƧdǅLDƓD
LǍǂŏƓdǆzhDǍNjÜƀƒǍ ɣƕ || !Ř Lǂƒ ƀ5ÜDǆ|Ƙƒ ƀŏŏkŎ5
.Lǰŏ˛ DŽŎ5łďƧz!ƒ ł dǍƒdǆ ƧŏƦLƵ 2 ˛ ü!
! łǂƧdǆƒ ýǍƧƘƀ KǂƧT ǍNj.. ɣƕ!ƒ LǂǍ
ƺ ƧùT!ƒ Ŏ5ŎNǍ ÜǂƧdǆƒ ýǍƧƘƀ KǂƧT K|!ƙƀ!
ÜłùǂƧdǆƒ KƒƧƓǆù ˛ Üƒ YǍdǆdǆLǰdǆ‰čē ýƛdǆŎ˛ ǍÜƒ
ƒŘǥƧŎP Ŏ5Ɠǰ!Ɠ dǆǥ.lƀƙdǆłǂƧdǆƒ KƓǍÜƒ ƲƧƓP
.ǍƓ|!ƓDǆ|Ƙƒ Ư Ƨ5

الفصل الخامس

!hˇfe |₠he‡ШĪ ʒ.. bĘШĐž

ýù Ț ƒĂ ÜLJŷ Ț DŽǁ ƨơ LŽ NǤĂŏ LJdžĔƞ!ƒ ƒŘNjŎ5

ƗǀŏĂ ýďDž Ì DžǢDž Ǘƒ ý‡ŏNjLJŷȷơ ƥdždžŏ‡ƒ ɣ Ǩ!ƒ

ù ldƞ5ù ɣ ƨơ!ƒ ǀŘNjƨȚ dž ýĂPɸ ƨƒƨ Ț D2 T‡k ÜƨŏƱP

ƗƱùƲ dž LJȕŽ lƨĞlǬ K'LǦ Ɨǀ ŏĂƒ .Ɨ ŏǤ K'ƒƒ ǂŘ ƒ ǘlĂ

ƨǒ ŎŘƒ Ɨ Ț DŽ ǀŘNj.ì ƨȚ dž ɣ ƒĂ!ƒ Σ DŽ Ɨ ŏƨȚ Ɨ Ț DŽ

NǤĂdžȗ Ǻƞ5ù ŎTƒƨǀLJƒ Ŏdž ɸĂdždž ƒƨƨĂƒ Σ ŏƨ Ǵǥ

LJDɸù ǂĂ ÜƨĞȚ ŏƒ Ì Ț ƥDĬ !ǫ LJŷdžƒ Ì Ț ƥDLJdžǁ ƨơ!ƒ LJdž

DŽ Ɨ ƞơƕ LJǾȚ DŽŎ5 Ɨ ŏȚžƨ Ǿơ ƨȚ dž ýĂPɸ ƥƲ LǦ

ǀŘù NjLJȕŽ yǤ dž !ǫ ÜƨƱP ì Ǖ ì ƨȚ dž ț ŏƞ!ƒ Ʋ ŏǂk

ýĂĞlơŏù LJǾù Ț dž ɣ ƒĂLDŽǤP Ŏ5ù ŘPĂ Üǁ ƨơ!ƒ

!DŽDŽǤ

:ɣ ƒĂLDŎTƒƨǀLJƒ Ŏdž ɸĂdždž ýǤ ɣ ǤP!ƒ ƒŘNjŎ5

ǁù!ŖŎù5Ă .ɣ ƨǂ!ƒ Ì DžŽƱȥƲ !ƒ LJĂŏĂȚ !ƒ ƥȚ ƥ!

Σ ù DŽǁ !‡Ă Üƥdž DŽ! Ɨ ŏĂdžƒ Ɨ ŏǂdžƒ K'LǦ K'ƥĂƒ

LJŷĂ ùȚ !ƒ LJD Ɨ 5Ǥ dž ýƥ LJdžΣ ŏĂ .LJǂdž ǂƞdž LJdžƒ

.DǤ Ơƞƨŏǁ !Ř LJDdždž ɣ ƨǂ!ƒ Ì DžŽƱȥƲ !ƒ ƒĂȚ

***

ƔǴĭƱP ǇƒƧĂ Ǵĭdžùǀǭơ 2 Ƭǂ ŎƼƧdžƐ ǒýǂǑNjĿǂ!

.. yǷĂƒĂ KǴǂǮ ĿǶǹĿƥǴĂ ǕŎƬƒƧǀĿǰ

:ǕǶŎƬƒƧǀĿǰ ƔǴP ĿǰdžƸŋ!ƒ ƒŘNjĭ ƊǮƔǀzǑƼ

ĿǴĂ.."ǀǀ ǒǑNjƧǴdž ǂǂƧzdž ĂƧƲ ýǂ KƬƵ ǷǃI "

ĿǶù!ƒ ǕƔƧz!ƒ ƧǒƧơǨƒ ǷƒĂƥǂƥǴdž ĂNjǕǶơƒĂ ƔǹƲ ǂƛƧǴƊŽ

ƔùƱP!ƒ ýùǒƥĿǰùdžĿǴ ǷǃĂ.ǂǂƧzdž ǀƧƒǫĭ ƊǮƒĂƧƬƊ

ǀǰĂùŋƧǒNjǀǒǫǂǒƧz!ƒ ǂzǑǵ!ƒ ĿǶǑ zǹǒĿƪƊǴǃ ǑƊǂǒƒǴĿǰ

!"ǷŋĿǰĂ ǂ ǒǫǒĿƪǂzǑǵ!ƒ ǇǴ ƵƊǃǮǴƲ

ǂǑƊýĂPƥ ĿĂzĿǫǕǴƥĂ ƔƒŘĿǰ ĿĂǀhƨǑƊĿǰ ĿǴ ǷƼ

ǀǰŘùNjǑùƼǂ ǷùơĭŘƒĂ.ĿǶǭ ƊƵƲ ƧƊĭ !ǫǂǒƧƩ ƫ, Ăǒŋ

ǀǷùŋĿǰ ǷùzƲ ƊǮǮƒŘƪ ĿǰƥĂǒǴǑǴǫĿǂǒƊdžǂƧzdž

.ǂdžĂNjdž

!.....ǂƛƧǴ ǂŋǑĿǰ KĿǴ ǴǶĂ

ǀǰŘùNjĿǰdžǒƧz!ƒ ƧǒƧơǨƒ ƫ, Ăǒŋ ĿǰdžǒǴƲ KƼƊ!Ă

.ǑùĿǶǀǀ!Ř KǑƧ ǷƥĂ ǕǑƪ ƼĿǰǴǂǷ ǀǰŘNjKǑƧ Ă.ǂǂƧzdž

ǷƥĿǴ ĭ Řƒ ǕǑĿǴƧǂǷ ƫ, ǒŋ!ƒ ǂǒǴdž KơǨ KƼƊǴǂǷ ǀǰŘNj

Ư ƧƊĭ ù!ǫǂùǒƧƩ KƒĂùƥýĂPƥ yĿǫĿƪǂƪ Ǵ NJŘPǨ

ĿǶǭƪ ƊǮĂǒ ĿǶǒƧǰ ǷơƊNjǰƔƊǮŘǫýPǷǒĿƪĂ ǕĿǶǭƪ ƊŽ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

***

.. Lǿǻηǘ!ƒ ƗǷƩŽdžƘ̃dǽÃ

.DŽǼǴǿǾ LǻdžĐŋǰƒƧPƍĂNjƩ ǴǻƒNǰǰƔǴ ǒǴdž ƮǽĂ

lƧù Ƭƶƞǰ ǾƝǴǻžƒ Ƙ̃ơƙĂ . Lǿǻ̃Ʈ ƉƩŽǑ5 LǰǛƒ ýƮ Ǵ!ƒ ĂNjǰƦNǰĂ

Ƙ̃ƒƧǴǿǖƮ ǴǻǰǽĂ . ƧơhǑ5 lƧǓƿƒƦNjLJƊƘ̃ǻηĂ5 ÝNǰǰ ƨ Ǖƈ

. lǻĂƶ!ƒ LǺǿǒƧǒ LǿƦƉƵPƒĂhĂ

NǰhǿǰǛƩ ǻ!ƒ Ǒ5ǐ ƧƮ dž ýƮ ǰǰƒ LǰdžǿƧhǑLǰǴǻĂ

ýùdžk lƧηn!ƒ LJƊǐ !ƍĂ ǕLǿǑ̃Ʈ ƉƩŽǑ5Ɨ!Ǵ!ƒ lƧĂǓP Ǐ !ƍǴǿ5

LǰdžLǰdžƒ Ǐ ƉƵǰƦǓPĂ ǗƗdžǻ!ƒ ƗơƮ !ƒ Ǐ ƉƵǰƦǓP :LǿƧǓP

.Ʃ̃ Ʈ ηƘƒ ƗǒơǴǰ

.. ǴǻǯƊčƉ Lǿǻηǘ!ƒ ǻƶ ƩƉǻŽ

! ƽǒƧǓ!ƒ Ǒ5LǿƧPƈǴǻƽƊčĒ || ǴǻǰLǰǽĂ

. ƊŽǴǿǾ Ǒ5ǴǻǰǿǰžǓ ƇǕǻNǰ |hǿLJƊƧƮ dƶơƊŽdž

ƔùǴƘ Ɨùdžƶ!ƒ ƔĂƶùƬ!ƒ Ƙ̃dǽĂ Ǘ́ǴǴ!ƒ ǻƘƬƒ ǴdžĂ

yùdž ǻǰoƙĂ Ǒùǰƶ!ƒ ǑùƮ Ăƒ Ƨư ơ ǗydžǴǻǰƘǴǻĂƗơ

.Ɨdžƶ!ƒ ƗƶdžǻǴ!ƒ LǰǴ! Ǒ5LǿĂǰƮ dž

:ƧƮ dƶƧ LǰǽĂ

ǴdžĂ ǗƗdžƶ!ƒ ǻǘhǿ NǰƊĂǰƘ ǴǻǰƵ ƧPƙ LJƊLǂdžǕ ǴǰƊ

.ǴǰǒƊƧƮ dNǰƊĂǰƦ ǻǘhǿ lǰƦNǰNǰƊĂǰƦ

***

ÜŨŕƒþŔdž KʿʒƤÃŽÃ ÜŨŨŃŁƚʝĂ DŭǆDǅ Ăŏη!ƒ KʹDPž ƒRǥÃ "

ǴŭǯÃ ÜŨŭǯƒ łƑŏŋj łʒ!Ǵdž|| ǴŃŊjΣ ǆÃ Üɣ ƨơ || ǴŃŊjLǰǂk LǰDŽ

łǶǴʅ ƶ!ƒ ljŖù NjLʝdžƙdžŎŔƒ Üłƨơ!ƒ Σ Ƭƨ ýƙþĬ DŽŽýdžLj

.łǆƨƶ!ƒ þŭŀŀþŎƼłǒƵĂǆT!ƒĂ ɣƒƧƱư Ŭƒ ƧTLjÜłǆĂŏηʅ !ƒ

!Üƨʒ&Lj þǆŨƒ ŎƼĂǂdž |LǰŨDǴŃǰŽŽɣ ηŏ

.łǆþĂηǆł!Ăþ || ǴŃŊjKʅ ǒ

.ł!Ăþƒ ljŖNjƧƧ|ǒDŽLʝdžƒ Σ DþǯŽLʝƼ

.DǆŽ|Ŕƒ LǲKʹDPŽǂƨdžŽÃ

ƫ ǒùη!ƒ LǰùƵĂ Üłùǆƨƶƒþŭŀŀù!ƒ ăĂùþLǲ ŎLǰǂƙ

Þ…lǴŋǴŋƒ ăĂþLǲĂ Ü ƧʅdŽ

.ǴŋŊΣ ǆŀŬłǆĂŏηʅ !ƒ KʹǴʅ ƶ!ƒ lĂþLǰŎƼYƒƨLǰŨ

DŊǰƨƒĂǆ ǰĂƨǴ LǰŔƒ LǰdžŽǂþþƵ DŊǆĂ ÜǴŭʅ DŊǰǲƒ

ăƧPŨƒ þŭŀþŎƼƧǴ LǰDŊĂ ÜƨǒǂƒýǴdžDŊþĂ ÜƧƼĂǂdž

DŭǆơłùDŽLǰŬƒ łùƵdžŋdžłǆƨƶƒ ýĂþƒ ăĂþDǂ!Ă ..

! ƻ þĂdž

LǰƨƧʅ dž ɣƒĂDŽŋǴŭƶ!ƒ KʹŬǴƷLǰŬƒ ɣ DŽŽǴŋ ǒDǴŊjĂ

..

Lǰu dž ȝù Ț Ǥhu ŎȚ ƒƧ|Lƒ Ŏdžǻ ƥĂdž dž ǫ ǤP Ŏnƒǿ Ă

!.. ǫ nƒǿ Ǯ ƥǤ!ƒ Dnƒǿ Ț k

:ýĂ|ǒ ƚ ǒǤǰƒ Ŏ5 ŎȚ ƒƧ|Lƒ ƥĂz ǒĂ

Ăù NĂ ÜLƥƧŰƒ ƽ ƧȚ ƫ ǒƞ ĂNĂ ŰŎhƧz!ƒ ƫ ǒƞ!ƒ || Ǥǰƒ

Nǰ ǒDǮ ƙĂ Üǒƻù ȚzƒƖ ǤǤ ǂ!ƒ Lǰdž ǒǤź ƚ ƞƧƥ Ĭ DǮ ƫ ǒƞ

!"LƒƧ ŎŎ!ƒ ƒƥƩ Ǥž. ƚǒǰĂ NƥŎ PƙĂ Nƒƥz dǯ

:ǮƑǤ ƙdžǫ ƒĂLƒ ƥơDK ĂȚ yȝƙƧǒ ǤǰĂ

ƥŎhƧz!ƒ ƫ ǒƞ!ƒ ƥƒƧ5 DƥƩ DǂĂ

ǤŹȝơƙdžǰĂǂDL ǰDŎ! ƒĂơ ǭƒ :ǮƑǤ ŎȚ ƒƧ|Lƒ NǰǮƥƧǒ

!ƫ Ăǒƞ!ƒ ƧƒƧȚ DŎ5

Lǰdž ơùȚ !ƒ Ŏ5 ||ǰƥ ǤǮ ýǤǤƙǒ ƧPƈ ǫ ƑǤǰ |ǒĂ

ƥǤǮǯ ƚǒƧz!ƒ ƚƑǒ!ƒ ƥư Ÿƒ ƥƺ || DǮK Ǥǒ ƧȚ k

:ǮƑǤ NǰǮ ŎȚ ƒƧ|Lƒ ǫ ǒƞǒ5

K Ǥǒ Ƨù Ț ƙ ǤǤƖ dž ƥù ƒƒƧƞ Ŏ5Ă .. NJKȝ ǳ ǤǰƋù

Ƨ ƧƙơdžĂDƧ ǒƺdžĂDƩ Ăƫ ƥdžNǰDLǰDĂ .. Ĭ ƧĂP!ƒ Ʃ ƧǤȝ

.ƚDǮǰƽ ƒƧz!ƒ ƫ ǒƞ LƥƧŰƒ ƽ ƧȚ ƫ ǒƞ ŎDǮǰDnƒǯ . . .

.. LǰĂ|ǒ Ǥǂ || ơư ǒǤdž ǒǰǮȚ LǰŰĂ

!..ƚ Lǰdž Ű Ƨǂƥdž. ýȚ Ǥǰ :ýĂ|ǒ ƚ !Ǥǫ ƑǤǰ ƥĂ ǰ5

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]

Ǥǿǰlžʃ ꜱ Ŏù ƙʄ ÜꜱĂù Ʈ !ʄ ǀǰƦǊLǰȟ ýƑǤǰʄ ꜭ ꜱǤʄ Lǥ

lꜱĂƮ !ʄ LǰȟĂ . ɣʄĂLʄ Σ ĐǰžŽ ŧ ǒꜱ !ʄ ŧ ĐǰŽ Ŏ5 ŎƮʄꜱ|Lʄ

Ǥɪnǰ ĐŽŽ K ù LǊǰh Ǥǰž Ü ʄƥoŰʄ Ǥǰǭžꜱ Ǥǰž ƺ ƥĂ ĐǰŽ ǰǰo!ʄ

!. ƥꜱ Ĭ !ǥ ɰ ǤǰóŰ .. ŧ ǒĐǰŽʄ ɣ ꜱǤƙʄ

:ý ǂ ǒǊ ý ǤǰǤ ƙ ǒ Đž

Σ ǒɰ ʄꜱ ýǤɪ ǒƤ Ŏ5 ƺ ƥĂ ĐǰŽ ꜱĂƮ !ʄ ǀǰƦǊ K ǭžꜱ ƺ ǥ

ƦꜱƮ dǯʄꜱꜱĂ

ƦꜱĂƮ !ʄ ǀǰƦǊǊʄĂǭžꜱ Lǰƙʄ ƭ ǤƮŰʄ ĐǰLǰž

yùư ƙ LĴĬ ĐŽ K ꜱ5Ǥ ƙ Ŏƙʄ ýĂ|ƺ!ʄ ŎǊǤž

ƦǊĴꜱ Ŏ5 ýǒ Ʈ Ǥƙʄ ǀǰƦǊ

ƦǊǰ Ljyd Ž Ư ƥǤ ǒ LĴĬ ĐŽǊǰž ꜱƙĂ

:ŽƑǤ Ǥǿꜱʊ Ŏƙʄ ŧ ĐŽŰʄ ǀǰƦǊĬ ĐŽý ǂ ǒǊ ɣ ǒɳǒ

.. lꜱĂƮ !ʄ ǀǰƦǊ K ǭžꜱ Ŏƙʄ ŧ|ǒꜱ!ʄ Lǥ

.. ǤǊǰ ǭžꜱ Lǰƙʄ ƭ ǤƮŰʄĂ

.. Ǥǰ LǰĬ ĐŽ K ꜱ5Ǥ ƙ Ŏƙʄ ǎĂ|!ʄĂ

.. Ǥǒž Ǥǰ Ž

!LǰǭƮ ĐŽ ꜱơ ǤꜱĂ .. ꜱǒǂʄ ǭƮ !ʄ

الفصل السادس

ǔùơ!ƒ ƥĂnƮ! ý‡ǑNjLǰĥ[jơ ƥơbždžǧ ƙǥ!ƒ Ǥƒ]LǰǧNjǒ ̆Dž

ƻ Ͳ‡Ă Dŋǧƥǥƞ̆Ʈhǔ ̌Ǘpú! DǨƘǤǗLǰƃ̂[ƊǬ ƨơ ƨƒƨ̃[̆Ɗĭ ƊŽ

! ĭ ƥ̂[Ǥƒ]!ƒ ƒƦNjǧNjǒ̆DžǗƨĂƥƮ !ƒ ƚ̃[ďǒơ ƨƒƨ̃[Ǖ̄ƒ

ƚùƶďǧƞ̆ǤĞǤƺǬƊLǰǥ ĭ ƦƒƊǮƵ Lǰbž!ƒ ƥƶ Dǰk ƥ̂5

ƫ ǤƵ ĭ Ʀƒ ƊǮƵ Dǰk ǕƁƥƶƚĂ ǤǗ̌PĂ ƚďžǕ̄ƒ ýhƥƚďǥƶ!ƒ

.NǰǤƞ̆Ʈhǰ !ƥǒǑ‡! ƨƒƨ̃[ǕƒĂ ƚ ƥ̌Ăơ!ƒ ǔ ǤƵŽDǑ5

lƥǤǗ Ͳ LǰƁhù Nǰǥ̌ĂǒǑ5ù ƻ ƨƙƶǒý‡ǑNjLǰƊƻŽĂ

ƚǒơǤǰǑ5ǦǕ̆ơ !ƒ LǰǓžƶͲDǑ|ƊŽǤǰLĂƥƙƊǮƵ Lǰbž!ƒ ƥƶ

Ĭ ùƊŽǔ ďƊǬƒ Ǒ5YƤ[ƙǒǕ̌Ă Ǘů̆ƥƙǒ NǰǦ Ǘǒơ |!ƒ LǰǓž Lǥ̌ďž

.lƥǤƮ!ƒ ljƦNj

- :ý‡ǑNjýĂ|ǒĂ
- .. ƨùǗƘǰLǰƊýĂǤƞ̆[Ă .. ƚ ƥ̌Ăơ!ƒ ǔ ƦǗƊLǰ
 !Ǥǥƥďž

***

Lǰĥ̂ďƵǮƶǗƵ Lǰbžù!ƒ ƥƶ ͲƥhǒǑơ ƒĂĂ ƩďƊǬ̆ĂƤ[ƶhù

:ýĂ|ǒ5 NǰǤƞ̆Ʈ ƚďǥƶ!ƒ ýĂƥƒ ƚƶďǧƞ̆

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

.. ƧùƲƘƒǰƓƌǆžƵǂƊƧƲƘǒǈ ƚƊƴǒǑƦƪ ǒǕ ƝǇƧƥƊž

!Ĭ ư ďž

.lƧďž ljƦNjƗơɳƓǈǺǂƘĂ Ɨ!ĂƓďž ƧƧǂƘ ƘǈƊĂɳƧƊƓǬ

ǕƗù!ĂƓďž ljƦùNjĭ Ƨù ɳƘ ǈƊƔ ɳǒ ǇƊƓƁƘǰďž Ƙ ƕƥ!Ă

. ǈƥƠƓďž ǈƠƧǂƪ ƶ!ƒ ǈƌžƵĂ ďž ƍžƓǰǲǂƘ ǈƊƔ ɳǒĂ

ljƦƞǰǲǂƘ ǕǇƓƶƒ ƇƒƧƝ!ƒ ǈƌžƑNjƊǇƦƪ ƒ ƟƧƘƥƊƓǬ

ƔƧùơ ǈƓǂƧƊƘƓƑNjĬ !ƍƗɳǒƘƒ ƊƥǂĂ ǕƥƠƓďž Ɨƪ ƒƧƥƒ

ƓƌǆĂ ǕƗ|ǌơ!ƒ ǈƌžƔ ư ʓƘ ǕƊƕƞǂƘ ǑƘƒ ǕƗǆƧƶ!ƒ ƫ Ăƞ!ƒ

!ƗƕƧɳƘƒ Ɨ ƛƧƓ ǈƌžƠƨƘ ǈƊýĂƓƘ

.. Ɨ ƥƒĂơ!ƒ ƽƕƲƊǈƊƥƧƊǕ ƓǬ

ƘùƕǒƵ Ăùƪ ǕƥƠƓďžǑǈƽǂƽ ǌơƘĭ ƊǈƊƽ ƛƒĂ ǑǇǂ!Ă

ljƦùNj.lƧNǴƲƗǒƝƵǑǈǒžƊƓǲýƥǕƒ Ĭ ƊžƵĂƥƘlƥơƒĂ Ɨ|ǌơ

ǈǰơǈĂ ǈƠǕùƪ ƊƵǂƓƊž ù ƔƧƶ!ƒ ǈơǈû ƓǰǑNjƗ|ǌơ!ƒ

!ƥĂƞǰƒ ǈƌžƥƵĂ ƒƝƵ ăĂƥƊ

ƘǈƓ ù ǕƛďǕ Ɨǒƶƽƥďž ƽƊǂƓǂƝǇƽ ƛƒĂ ǑǇǂýƕ

ăĂùƥƊƗƼơƒƨ!ƒ ƗǆƧƶ!ƒ ƫ Ăƞ!ƒ ǈƌǑƕƧƵ ƫ ǒƞ Ĭ ƊƗǒƶƽƥďž

!ƓƥǂžĂƞǰƒ Ɨǒƶƽƥďž ǈƌžƓǰơĂ

.. ƗďǆNjƗ!ƪ ďǰƦNj

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

ƔƨơǃƒýƤƥǒƻ Ăƪ ǕƛdžǑǇƥƨǗƒ ƫ ǒƞǃƒ ǇƤƘǇƥƤǃĂ

..

ƻ Ăùƪ ǑǇƥƨǗƒ ƫ ǒƞǃƒ ǇƤǑǃǴƤhƨƬƤǒƊž Ƙƒ ǇǂǃĂ

ǃǴƒƺǒǕĂ Ɗǆ|Ƙƒ ƥĂƥơ Ǒƽ ƝƤǴ ǇƤƺǒƵ

.. ƝƑƘǃƒ ƨƬƤƊ|| ǃƘǏ ƊƵƷƔƘƘƊž

Σ ǐøƲǇƊƵ ýĂù|ƘǑƘǴĂƺƵ ýǂ ƘǇǴ ƥƽ ƨƪ dƶǴƊž

ǃüǑƞƊ|ǚ ƥƬ ƊǅŽ

ǴƪƝǒƨ Ǵnƒ Ă ǇǴǂĂ ǑƘǅĂǃƒ ǐ ƨǂƬ ƥǒ ǃƒ ǇƤƨǂƘĂ

....ǂǒƨĂƪ ǃƒ ǂǒƨĂnǰǆƊŽ

ƿƔƨơǃƒ ýƤƥǒ ǐ ƨƪ dǆƫ ǒƞǃƒ ýǋ: ǑǇǃƞ

Ǐ ƊƵƻ |ǒƪ Ǌǵ ýĂ|Ƙ ǆƥ ǑƘƒ ƘǴĂƺƵ Ǉǥ: ǊƘƤŽ

ǃýƤƥǒǇ Ǌǂ ..ƥƺƘƪ ƒ ǂǃǴ Ǒƽ ƥĂƥơǃƒ

ƊǅƞýĂƤƥƒ ýhƥù ĂǴǴƶ Ɖ ƊĂǒ Ǒƽ ǑǇƤǴ ǑƊǂƘĂ

|| ƊǅǇǴĂ Ÿƒ ƥƺ || ƊǅǊƨĂƺdƶƨƒĂƞhƘƺĂ ù ƥơƒĂ

.Ǉǒƪ ƊƵǃǥýƤƥƒ ǊǒƞƯ ƨƺƪ ǒŸƒ ƥƺ

..... Ÿƒ ƥƺ || ƊǅǊƊƵýǴƵ

ǙƵƘǴǰĂdž ǇǑƘƤƨƪ dǇdžƘǒƘǃ :ǑǇǃƞĂ

.ǂƨƺdǆýƤƥǒƻ Ăƪ ǐ ƨƪ dǆƫ ǒƞǃƒ Ǉƥƺ

LJDLJȕUYǍ .. Ƨù ǒǧkǐ ƊǂǍƥơhyơƫǩDD ǩǑLǥ:NJKƊƥǨ

!ǂǒƧƮ dǰƥǍƥơ!ƒ Ǐ ƊǨNǥǰǍdǩƊǩǔǒƨ Ǎƫ ǐ ƧƮ dǰƫ ǒŋ!ƒ

ýùƤƥǐ Ƨù Ʈ dǰƫ ǒŋ!ƒ LJD‖!Ʀ ƥǩhǂ ƥơ ǐ Ʀƒ LǂǂǍ

!ǮƵ5

Ǒù ƮƒƧ|Lǰ K!ƭǍ ǕƧƮ dǩ !ǥKƥǨ ǑLǰDǴǰhǂƧǂƦǍ

.ýǍơǨƒ ƒƦNjƧƫ LǨ

LǰǕƧ!ƒ ƥǩǓ ǴŸƒǍ :ƥơƒǍ!ƒ 2 Ƨơ!ǴǕǑ! ýǴNǰƧǂƦǍ

ǕǍ ǕǴnǒǕLJȕ dǰƒ ǂ!Ǵ ǕǍ ǕǂǒƊǰƥƒ ǴǨǴ Ǖ NǰKƥŋǍ ǴD

!ƧUǨLǰLJDǴjǑƫǩk ǴǨǰƧǂ

.. ƧƤƈǑƮ ǐ ƊLǨ ǴǰǰƥhǒǑ5ǴǩǨkǂǂƧzdǰKLǴǍ

Ǒù5ǴǴǴuư ǒDǑùƮƒƧ|Lǰ LJȕdǰǒƦƫ ƊLJDƔơDKLǂǍ

:ǑNǍ NǰƧǴǨ Ǒ5ǴǰƧǍDǑǨƒǂ ǖƛƒ ýƦǴdǰ

- .ǂǒƊǰƥƒ ǴǨǴ
- .ǑƊǰƥƒ LǰǕƒǂ!Ǵ
- .ƧƮ dǩǥƧǂ

... ǑLǰǍkDǩ ǍƧU!ƒ LǂǂǍ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

ƚùŢ ŀĂǁdžƚ ʹƐĞ!ĞůƵEĚ͘KΎ͘ ͘ ơDŝ ĸĴ DĂŽĴ Ï !ǥƥĂŽDĂ

!ƽ ǒƐŮ!ƒ Ï ĐƶŽĐĚǰ

Ï ù!ǥKΎƥŽ DŽŬĚdžĚ!ƒ Σ ƥ!ƒ ǑƼƚǒĂƨƶ!ƒ ƚ ɳĵƞ!ƒ KΎƨƨ

ù ƨĂɧùŢ LĵƥùƒƥŽ ǐ ǙƐǒdžǰƒ ĞǒƼKΎĐƥŽ|| ĞĴĂ Ü LĵĞŽ

ƚǒƨƚùŢ ƶ!ƒ ƚù ŽĚDŽĞŢ ǒƨ ĞǒĂǒLĵĞĂ ù   ƥƶ ĞŽǒƼǤĂDĵŽ

.ƚǒĂƶ!ƒ ţ ĂǒɳDŽǒĞƶ!ƒ lƥĞ!ƒ ǎ ƥ ƚǒƨŢ dž ƚǒƨĞŘ Ǚƒ

:ƨĂɧŢ ! KΎƥŽ ▪

ƒŘĂƶùT Ǒ ƽLĵǑƼƚ ƶɧǒΣ ƥ!ƒ ǑƼƶ ƿĂdž Lǥ ▪

Ï ù ĐƶŽDĂŽùɳɳĵ ƬƥùhǒLĵDɣ ɳǒ LĵĞ ƥ! .ƽ ĐĴĞǒ

ţ ǒùɳ!ƒ ýùƴĂdžKΎǒƨ ǑLĵĂ Ülƥǒƥ!ƒ Σ ƥ!ƒ

ýĞƥ ýĂdžKΎ ǒ ǑNĂ ÜNĵdžǩƨƚƒƨdžĂ ǑĂƶ!ƒ

ǑùƼƚùǒĵlƨùƞ Ï ùƶƥDǙ ĞĐĂ .Ǒ! ƒƥ ɧĞǒƼ

.ɣĂƨơ!ƒ

!ƽ ĐĴĞǒǑ! ǑΎƶǒĞĵƶ NƥŽDĞǆƚ!

.. ǑLĵĂdžƨĂɧŢ LĵDƨƚŘĂ

DŽǑŘƒ ýĂdž LĵĂ ÜƚƲP || ĞĴLĵDƶ ƨƶǒNĵǑ! ýĞĂ

!ƚƲP!ƒ Lĵdž ƥɳĵ ƽ |ơk ýĞƥKΎĞdžǩ ĞĵD Ǒ! ƥɧǒ

.. DǒĞǩDŽ ƥ!ƒĂ DĞDKΎư dž

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]
- [illegible]
  [illegible]
  [illegible]
- [illegible]

- ÜNJ ŋ ĂŘĂ Ğ ŋ ŋ 5 2 ƿ2 Ă̦ 5Ü ɣ ŏĎ ýk Ĭ !ǫ K Ď Ž ƒ Řǫ

!Ğ ƥ Ž ŏ Ƨ ƶ! ƒ ł ď Ž ƒ ƥ ɯ Ĭ ƙ ơ

Σ ƥ!ƒ Ď ŋ ğ L ƥ Ă̦ ..ŊĎ Ž Ƨ U ƙ ƒ j:Ÿ ƒ ƥ ƶ || Ď Ž Ö! ý ğ

Ğ Ŋ ù ĩ LĂ ƚ ƥ ŋ!ƒ Σ ƥ!ƒ Ƨ Ţ Ğ L ƥ Ă̦ Ă..Ğ ŋ ŋ Ŋ Ă ł ď ŋ!ƒ

!ɣ ŏĎ ýk Ğ ƥ ƶ Ă..Ƨ Ğ o!Ğ ʋ

.. K Ƨ U ƙ ƒ Ă

.ł ď ŋ!ƒ Σ ƥ!ƒ Ƨ ŏ ŋ Ŋ k Ď Ă

.Ő T Ü || !Ʀ ƥ ƶ ƕ Ł ǂ!Ă

Kù L ğ ƨ ù ŏ Ď Ž ƒ y Ğ Ŋ Ŋ ù Ğ ƥ ƶ ƕ Ŭ ǫ ù || Ƨ ƥ Ď Ď Ă

!Ƨ Ğ Ğ ƒ Ƨ Ă L ƚ Ž ɣ ƶ Ď Ž

..Ƨ Ţ Ğ k Ŭ Ă ƚ ŋ ŋ!ƒ Σ ƥ!ƒ Ʊ ĩ k Ŭ Ď Ă ƥ Ţ ƿ ƥ!

Ŭ ǫ..Ŏ L ƥ Ƨ Ŭ ƒ ţ ŏ ŋ!ƒ || Ƨ o ƙ ŏ Ŭ Ď Ď ŋ ğ Ƨ ł L Ă ğ ď ž ƒ Ă ƙ Ƨ Ă

!Ď Ž | ƙ ƒ Ƨ Ğ ǫ Ŏ 5

الفصل السابع

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]

- Lǿdžǖ ƧƮ dǿ ţ, ǒŋ!ƒ ƻ pǍdžǅ Nǚ[illegible] ǐ Ʀƒ Ǵdž
ĦLǰǗƮ [illegible] ǜ Ƨơ ýǍƤƥ
- :ýƒǭƮ !ƒ ƥƧǒǑǬ ơ!ƒ Lǿ[illegible] ǜ ƙǂ
- Nǰ! ƒ[illegible] dǯǂǒ ƊǮ ƧƮ dǿ ţ, ǒŋ!ƒ LƆ[illegible] Ʀƒ
|| ù!Ʀ Kƶǭž ƥƿǍ .LǰǗƮ [illegible] ǜ Ƨơ ýǍƤƥ
ǴƮNǒƧ LǴǂ ǐ Ʀƒ ǕǑTƒƧ|Lƒ Ǎǒ[illegible] dǿ Lǿdžoƒ ƧƮ
ǕLǰǍƒ dǿ Lǿdžǰ[illegible] Lǿ[illegible] Ǵ[illegible] .ĦǾ ƖƧƒƨǍƊŽ
Kƒ[illegible]Ǎ ǎ ƥù ơǥ Σ ǒù ǇƧ Ɵƨù Ƙƍ Ǵ[illegible] Lǂ NǰǏ ƙơ
ǂǒƮ Ǵ !ƒ ǂ ù L[illegible] ǍǑ5ù ǂǒ[illegible]!ƒ K[illegible]o!ƒ
čĕĐĔ Σ Ƨ[illegible]ǑƼ ƥ[illegible]ǐ Ʀƒ ǂ[illegible]!ƒ ýǍƥƒ ǂƶ[illegible]!
[illegible]ù ǂǒƨù Ʈ dǿ ǂ ù ǒŋƧ[illegible]!ƒ ƖƧƒƨǍ Ƨƒ[illegible]ǑƼ
ţ, Ǎǒŋ!ƒ ǜ Ƨơ L[illegible] Y[illegible]ƒ ƥƶ[illegible]
.LǰǗùƮ [illegible]ù!Ǵ Ǒù5ǂ ù!Ǎƒ[illegible]Ǎ ǂ o[illegible]!ƒ
ǂ ù ư Ƨ[illegible] || ù!Ʀ Ǒù5ǑTƒƧ|Lƒ Ǎǒ[illegible] dǿ Ư Ƨ[illegible]Ǎ
|| Ǵ L[illegible] ǛƠNǰ Y[illegible]ƒ LƆǂ ŋơ[illegible]T
Ǵǰ Σ ǒ ƧƮ dǯƆ[illegible] ǜ Ƨơ ýǍƤƥ Ǒ5ǂǒLǰ
.Ǵ[illegible]ǂǒ[illegible] ǰƦNǰ

ý‡ ‡||ʃĂdžǕ Üǉőčdž ǈő!ʃ || !ʀ ŎƼƧƮ dž̄ƪ Ǿ̆ KĽǤĂ

ýƤ ǉù ƙŰ ĽƉŎù5ÜǈőǉǰŎùƪ ƍǰŽĽǰĂƪ dž‡ħƧ! Ü|ʃĂdž

Ɗŷƪ ʃƋĽĂǉŎùƪ ƍǰŽƊĂǉ|ǒ ýhÜĽǰǑƪ ƋŽǒƧz!ʃ ƫ, Ăőŋ!ʃ

Ɵűùƪ !ƓǉƵǴƪ dž ƊŽnj ƊǰĂ|ƙĽƪĂ ÜƊŽǊǉùhĽƵ ƳƓƩǉƓǔ

.‡ĽǰdžǰŽ ýƦǴĂ!ʃ ý‡Ă ýʃĂdžǰĂ ÜƧƦƓƦʃĂ

***

ƫ, ǒùŋ!ʃ ĽƉƊŽdžƵŽǏ ƙdžŎĽǴʃ Njǰƪ ý‡ǑNjNJƔƙ‡ǒ

ƥƵ ǵ‡Ă.. ýƤǉƙǒƵ Ăƪ ǐ Ƨƪ dž

:ŎĽǰ ơ!ʃ ĽǰǰŽÜƓ!ʃ ǉƧǒ

ýùǒƥŰƍÜýƤǉƙʃ Ǐ ƊŽǏ Ƨƪ dž ƫ, ǒŋ!ʃ ƊŽhƊŽŽƊŽ

ĂǒǴdžŽŋƮ ŎƼ ƫ ƬǉŽŎƼKĽǰ ǉƼƳʃŋ ƧǒƮ ƿKƿĂhNJĂƤǉ

ýĂǉù!ʃ ‡ùzǒǴ! ‡ǒùƪ Ǿ̆ !ʃ ‡ĽŋƊŽƳǴʃ ‡ƪǉǴzǔčĕƊĔ

Ŏù5Ƨù!ƥ!ʃ KƊùƿƊŽÜzʃƦŰʃ ĽǰdžƵ!ʀ KzǒŽĂ Üǒƨz!ʃ

.|| ǴǊƵ ơƮ !ʃ

:ý‡ǑNjNJǒ

ƳǰƊǰŽj. !|||ƔƊƊŽǕƊǰƐƤj Ɗǰ üǰNj

:ĽǰǑƪ ƋŽǕƨdžǉǒ

ǑĹǖǰ . Ǒ! ǎ ƧƗǂ lǝƞǤdž ƧƮ dǅ ţ, ǒŋ!ƒ ýǍPþ LǤ ƒ ƥ!

Ɖƥǎž Ǒù 5 lƥù ǂǕƒ Ǵƙƥ ƧǍ ǕƧƮ dǆǕP Ĭ ƊžǕǴǑžǆ K'Lǂ
.ýǍPƥƒ

:ýǂǑNjNǰ ǒ

ƥƒRǴǍ .. ýPƥƙƒ ƒRNjƉǂǎƨ LƥdžǤ ýNǍ

:ǑLǭ ơ!ƒ LƥǑǕǴ!ƒ ƥƨǒ

ýùhǕLƥǑ] ƉǮžǒƨ!ƒ ţ, Ǎǒŋ!ƒ ýǍPþ Ǒǒƨ LƥdžǂǒƊž

.ƊǕžNjƥùhLǅ YǤƥǴƊǂ ǤƊLƥǑ] ƉǮNjƊǍǒ LƊǑǒƨ LǤ

ƧƑǷRù!ƒǍ ƗơƊǕǴƗù ǒƨ!ƒ ƧǴǕƥǕƒ lƥǴdžLƥǑǴdž

.LƥǍǕƙdžǍ Lƥǒƨǂ[ƶ!ƒ ǤƧƞƀ!ƒǍ ǕyƒǍdžƒǍ

LƊǑ5ǕǂǒǑ] ƉǮǂǒư |!ƒ ƠǤ LƊǎƧƊǤƥ K'Lǂ ƥ!

ýǍƥù!ƒ K'LƊǍ ǕƊƙǑǍ LǅYǤƥǴƊǂ ǤƊLǍǒǑ] ƉǮƊǍǒ

.ƒǮƒƧdžNjýǒǴƙK'ǴǍǕ Ƭƨ!ƒ ƒRŋǂǒƨ!ƒ

.ƊǴǅNjǍhǂǕP!ƒ ljRNjĬ ƉǅǂǒƨǏƒ ýǍƥƒ K'|5Ǎ ƥǍ

ƗùǒǴǑ5 lƥƶLƥǰ Ɨǒƨ!ƒ ýǍƥƒ ƗƶǒǤ Σ ƊƞǕǑƧǍþ Ǒ5

Ǥǅƥƙù] ƒ Σ ƊƞǕƧƧþ (čěĐē ƧhǍǂƊLƥdžǂǤ!ƒ Ǒ5 LǤƥǑž

Lǰž ƧùǒƨlƙyưǍ Ǖǒƨ!ƒ ƧǴƥǕƒ Lƥdž Lƥǒƨǂ[Ƶ ǤƧƞƀ

.LƥǑ] ƉǮǅ YǤƊžƧǕ!ƒ ýư 5Ɗ

ýDŽķÅ .ƱǴú !ƒÅ ƥǴž!ƒ Ư žħùÜŀŚÅŚư !ƒ ƥĿž Lǰƥ̌Ňƣdž
Σ ǒûƪ dǯƥĿž ŧLǰǴdDŽǯŽǍƱdž ƼƮ hŧǒǰƒ Kƒƥ̌ơĂƒ Ư žħƲ
.ŧηǴ!ƒ
..ŧƱP!ƒ ljŘNj DŽŽǒǯž!ƒ ŧzdǴ!ƒ Σ DŋǯŽǯ ƼĂ ƥpĂ
ƥùLǰǴŧù ƑƥķǒdǯŃƥǰķ ǑƼŧǒƼƪ ž!ƒ ŧLŋDŽK'ŽƧT DŽ
ÜDŋǯǒDŽķĂ LǰƥǒƱùƪ DŽŽɣǒƥùķĂùNĂ ǗĂÜƒ ǑƪƮÜƒ
LǰƱùƪ DŽŽɣ ǴúT LǰdžLǰÜƒ ǴǯŽŧǒǯž!ƒ ŧƑǒŀƒ K'ŽƥƦ ƒĂ
ƒĂŽƧùT ŧ ùǒơ ƼTǒƥɣ ƧħŧLǰp" ƧǂƤ zdǯǑƼÜɣǒƥƦDŽ
.LǰĂǒƥǒ
DŽƥķħK'ŽƧƮ LDŧǒǴǒħƥŧǯŧơ!ƒ ŧ ħDŽDŽŇƧƮ
ǑDŽķĬùDŽŽǴnƥƼƯ Ƨķķ ŧǒǯž!ƒ ýĂƥƒ ŧzdǴ! lƧŧŘdž
ĂơLǰÜ ƥŇƧƮ ýdž NǰħŀƪŘƼƪ ƒĂ ÜDŋƥǯƥķĂ LǰƥǒƱƪ DŽŽ
!LǰƱƪ DŽŽdžħɣǒƪ ķDǯǑķƒ ÜħƥŘdžŧǒǴǒħƥŧƱDŽ
Ĭ ùDŽŽƧdŽdžǑžư LǰdžŇǰķǴĂ lƧŧŘdž ljŘNjK'LǴƼ
ÜùƱP!ƒ ýƥùħĂ YǴ ĂÜƒ ɣDŽŽǴƥ (ŧǒǯž!ƒ ýĂƥƒ ŧzdǴ
LDŧ ùħDŽŽǯĂ .LǰƱƪ DŽŽŽ YǴƥƒ ǑƼǑƪƮÜƒ LŧƧ!ƒ ŧDŽŇj
LǰƥǴǒdžLǰž ÜLǰƥǒƱùƪ DŽŽǴƪ ƥŧƪ Ǵ ǁ!Řƥž ħK'ƧħǰƑ
.DŋƒýĂƮ Ăƒ LǰdǯƒĂdǯƒĂŧơƪǯƒ yŧǰĂŧƧzdž

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

Dŷǰ!Ǵĭ ꞁ džŽǒǾħĂDŬǑhŋǰŨƒ ƧǴǆǩ Ǔƒ ǑơĂhǵǆĽĂDǆǒ

!ł ꞁ ǴP!ƒ

Ljǒǯ ÜǑǴ dǰĂ ǴĂŋŬƒ ɣ ƧǴŕ k- :ƒŖǈĽǮ ǇŖĽǰǫĂ

Üłùǒǆ!ƒ łù zǆǴ!ƒ ýĂǫ Ljûh ýŖǴŖǰĂ Üǲ ƒǫǈǰĂ KǴǆ!ƒ

.ł ǆŬƒ łȜǴ!ƒ ǉŖǈYĂǫĂĂ

ƧĂù dǰƒ ǫǒǴdžDŷǫǒDǑ5KĽǴ LǰŖƒ Ư zhLꞁD.Ǵǆƒǫ

ÜDǯù ǂƒƧdžǑĽĂù ǩ ǖù ǇǰĂùĽǰłǒDǆǂǆꞁ z!ƒĂ łǑ Ǵ !ƒ

ǫùŋ!ƒ ѲĂƧ Ljùdž ǇǰǒǩǴǆǑǕƧǒǕP!ƒ łǑǆdž ǉŖǈłŋ!ǴdžĂ

.łǒơ ŖǰĂ Dǒǆǩ ŖǰĂ

ĽĂŧùT!ƒ Ǒù5Ǒùơ Ǵýùmǰ ýǮ Dŷǰ zhLǇhǫĂ

ÜĽǒÜꞁ DǮPǫǒDǆDŷǰ zhLꞁD !ǥł5Ǵŕ ŬǴùDŷǆ.łǒǂꞁ z!ƒ

łǒǂù ꞁ z!ƒ ǴǰĂdǆ łǒǆƧŋ!ƒ ǴĽĂŦ LǮ ǴǆT 2 ƧzǒDǆ

Kù ꞁ ǒ ǴnǰǥƩ ǫ!ƒ łǒǆDǴǆ:ŽȜdžƩ ǫ!ƒ LǮ ýĂǒDǰdž

!ǴǒǆƧꞁ ƒ ǴǰĂdž

ǇǰĽdžĽĂùhDǆ ĽĂǒǆÜꞁ DǆĽĂǫǇǴdž LǴ ǴǆǰĂ

ǐ ǫùǑDǑ5Ǖꞁ kǖ!Ü ǫ!ƒ LǮ YǴDǆĦù ꞁ !ǴùDŷǫǂǴdž

.. ýǑꞁ ǀ!ƒ łǂƧzdžǑ5ł ǫơ ǴǆÜǰĂŋǰƒ

: ǇĂǀhDŷǫǒLǴ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

- [illegible]
- [illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]
- [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

Lĵù ǒǫƱù P Nǆĵ[ǒdžǒDmǆǒǫǒ LĴDǑǵƧz!ƒ ţ ǒɳ!ƒ Ɣ ǍDnŽ- ĐǍŽ

! ƗƗǒǆǫ!ǴĵǍzǒ NĴǒɳ lƧdžǨ dŽDǴǓŽ ydǆǵ

Ǎù ơLĴNĴNǵǨƒ Ǒ5 ýǒɳ Ɨ|ƱǉǵLĵdž ƧǍ[!ƒ ţ ǒɳ!ƒ ý|ǨǒǍ

ydž[Ĭ !ǫǗĵǍnǒƒ ƧŢ hDǴǍ ǗƧǴǵ Ơr Ǎ Ǒ5 Ǘĵ5Ţ

Ƕ|| ǴǉǵǨdžnDǇǆ ƧzǒǍ

KǗǴ ơ ĵùTDǑ5Lǵǵ Ĭ Ǩĵ) ǑǵƧz!ƒ ţ ǒɳ!ƒ ydǆǵǨǴdž- Đ

ǑdžŢ ǒDǍ ǗNǵNĴǍ ơLĴDǨƒ LĵdžǵzǨ ǗƒǍ ƗŢ ǴdžƒĬ

.ƗǂƧzdžǒDǴ!ǴNĴ

ǗčëĐĚ NĴǒǉǒǑ5"Lĵǒɳ" ƗLǒǉdžKƒǍ|!ƒ KdžǴNĴǴǍ

Ɨù|ƱǉǵĬ ĵNǵdžýdž|ƧKƒ ǗĵǒƒǍ ǑǵƧZ ǗǍ5 Ǵǒ5 LǵǍ

Ĭ ù!ǫDǨǍùDžùhǍ Ǘùdž NĴƧT DǨǍNǍ ĵǍnǒƒ ĵŢ Ǒ5

ǔhKDŽǑǨƒ ǗǴǒ ĵǍnǒ Ǒ5 ǵǒǍ Ɣ ZƧ!ƒ yǍǍ ǗLǍɳDŽ

ǎǴǨT" Ĭ ĵǍnǒƒ ǴǨǉǒDŽ ǒƧ ýŢ ƧǂǨǂƧzdǵ lǨNĵzhYǴĵ

ǗLǴdž5 ƧNǴƱ ǗǴ ơ!ƒ Ɨǒǉǵ Σ ǒƧ ǑǨǴLĵdžǂ "Ƨǒ

.ǑǵƧz!ƒ ţ ǒɳ!ƒ Ĭ !ǫǴǒ DǨŽ ǗƔǴǂhơDŽĵǴǍ

lĵù ƑǴǍ ǑǵƧz!ƒ ǗǍǵƒ lĵǍzhKƧdǂdž!ƒ lĵǒ!ƒ Lǂ!Ǎ

ǗDǍ DŽĵTDNĴKnĵǍǍ ..Ɨ|ƱǉǵLĵdžNǨǒŢ Ĭ Ǩƒ ..ýŢ Ǵĵ

!ǶǂƧzdǵ Ư ǍP Ĭ DŽNǨǴǍ

ţ ǒûnŋ!ƒ ǴīdǆǐjǆɣoùՂ Ă ƥù ĐƒǮ ǂĐǆǮƒ Kˋǒ ĐPǮƒ ƦǴdž - đ

ĦSShǒdžǺƥhɣ ĂDŋŽŽdǆhǑĿƥƨǕƒ

ĿǰudǆǴǵǱĐĿǰ ǆĐǮĂ ǂƑǴdžĂơĿƥǒƨTk Ǒ5 ǴƥǒǑ || !ƦĿǴƒ ƥ!

!ɣSz!ƒ

ţ Ăùǒŋ!ƒ Ư ùzhuƥŋĿǰĿǺƥ K!Ǵ ǑƦƒ ɣǴǑƥǕƒ Ǵdž - Ē

ǕǴƦƥǒč Ă ɣ|Ŀƒ || SǴdžǑ5 Ǖ SՂ dǆ ţ ǒŋDǮǒSz!ƒ

ĦčĕĐĔ ǂՂĵ SǒǆǆǒƥĂ SǒǒǮĂĿĵ SŋՂ Ǒ5

ƫ ƼƒǑƦƒ ǕƗƱP!ƒ ĦƼǰĿǺƥ K!Ǵ ǑƦƒ ɣǴǑƥǕƒ ǑNjǴdž ē

Ǒù 5ǕƗùǒSz!ƒ ţ Ăùǒŋ!ƒ ɣSơ ĿǴSDǴՂ ǒS ǴƥǒDŽ

|| ù 5Ă Ǵŋ ĂǴƒ ǂǒǴ ĦǴĿǰ ǕSNǰƒ Ǒ5 DǴǴǴǆƒ

ĦǴǆǮ SǴ ơ!ƒ

ǴǰǴՂ SǫSS|dǆù Kˋƒ Ă|!ƒ ɣ ĂDŋŽƴƒSĿŋ!ƒ yĿdž ǂĂ

Ŀǰdžu ǂdǆǰǆ|ǰƦ!ǰ Ǒƒ Sz!ƒ ţ ǒŋ!ƒĂ ï SĂՂ !ƒ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ ƴǂ Ŀǰdž

ĦĿƥSǕƒ ƫ SՂ Ǒuƒ SǴhSĂSdǆ

čĕĐĔ ĂǴǴdžĔĂ čē Ǒ5ù ɣ ĂDŋŽƴƒSĿŋ!ƒ SǒǮƦǴdž- Ĕ

ɣǴhƫ ǒûuư dž ǰdǆǰǒǴǒՂ ĐǴĿǰƥNǴdǆ UƥSPƎhù

KˋƒSǴûՂ !ƒ ƴù 5Ăƥ NĿĿǰdžǒǆ ǕNǰK5 ĿǴǴĂ ǕǴĂƒ

ɣùǒĐƴkĿǰdžǴƥdǆĂ Ŀǰdǆ Ă ƟǕՂ !ƒ ǂĐǴǴ ǕǂƥĂ ŋǆƒ

LĴǴǂ ï ŀ̦ù !ƒ Ü̈Σ ƥù|!ƒ ƚù Lǿ[illegible]ďž Lǳdž ƥĂ ŋǰƒ Dǯ!ƒ Ĭ !ǥ

LĴĂù [illegible] ƒĂƥǴǂĂ ÜLĴĂ [illegible] [illegible] LĴĂƥNǵdž |ƧŢ Ǵŏ

ù ï ƥĂù ŋǰ2 !D ƚ [illegible] Ldž [illegible] D Ŋǿ[illegible] Ʃ Ǵ[illegible]ù Ŋǿǿ̦

[illegible] ŀ̦ Ǚƒ Ĭ DŽ

KƒĂù ƥĂ ÜŎù Lǿ2 Ǖƒ ţ ôù ŋ!ƒ ɣ ĂD ŽýƒƧLŋ!ƒ ɣLǳ[illegible] ďž- ĕ

[illegible] ƥ!ƒ Ƨŏ Ƨo Ł Ldž [illegible] Ă Ü Σ ƥdž ƥǴŋ!ƒ

![illegible] ƚ Ƶ Ǵ ŀ̦ Ǚƒ Ŏ5|| ! ŀ L[illegible] ƥĂ

Ǚù ŏ[illegible] ƒ ƚù ƶ [illegible] !ƒĂ [illegible] ƒNjKƒƧ[illegible] ýǘłoƒ ɣLǳ[illegible] ďĂ

Σ ƥù|!ƒ Ĭ ù [illegible] Ǵ Ŋ[illegible] ƒ ŀ̦ ù ƱPĂ ƥ[illegible] ǂƒƧd [illegible] ƧłĂ

[illegible] ŏ Ƨz!ƒ

Ĭ ù !Ă Ǖƒ ƚù Lǿŋ!ƒ ƥƶ Ĭ !ǥ KƒD Ŏŀ̦ƒ ɣ Ǵ[illegible] Ǖƒ ŎNjǴdž- čČ

Ŋǰ Ŏ5 ƚ ŏ Ƨz!ƒ ţ Ăŏŋ!ƒ KLǿ[illegible] ï ŀ̦ƒ KƥĂƒ Ŏ5 Ǚ[illegible] ƒĂ

Ǵ[illegible] ĂÜ[illegible] Ƶ Ŏ5 ƚ ƥĂ[illegible] ďĂ Ü|ƧŎ[illegible] !ƒ ýǂ lƧŎ[illegible] dž

[illegible] ďĂ Ǵ[illegible] ƒǴĂ

Lǰdžýǂ Ŏ5Ǚ[illegible] ƒĂ ƚ ŏ Ƨz ƺ Ʊ Ǵ[illegible] ĂŋD Ǩ [illegible] ďž- čč

Ǚ[illegible] Ă ÜDž KŏĂ Ü Σ ƥ!ƒ Ĭ ư ƒƧĂ Ŏ Ƨz!ƒ ƚ Džž

ƚù [illegible] || ǂù ţ LǳdžNǰ [illegible] ă Ăłoł Ǵ[illegible] Kŏdž Ƨoł!ƒĂ

ĂDǴ Sùơ LǺƒù lĂ Ü΅ ƒĂS łǿǼƒ ƒzŀ ǜŀ dǎǰlǯ SŬĂ

ĦSĔhdž

ǴĦŽĂ ǴǴĂ Ǵǿơ Ĭ ĐŽǷĂ ǹǰƒ Ĭ !ĂŖ ƒ ƒŖǴĂ.. 2 ǯ - čĎ

Lƒdž LǰdžǴǷǬĂ lǿǾŋ!ƒ Σ ƒ!ƒĂ ÜŁS Ǵƒ Ă ƒŞ Ă

KƿĂƒ Ŏ5Üǅ Sz!ƒ S Lǂ ǴǾ Y ĐǯŐŔƒ Ü Ǖ ǴǰĂ

ĦǷĂ ǒdǯǴǰ ǖǴǿŬƒ LǴ Ĭ Ŗƒ

الفصل الثامن

ƨǎƨùT!ƒ ýùŋƨ!ƒ Ɣù‡ƙƨŏĂ ƨǎƨT ýŋƨ ŎƖǬĵƒĂ Ɣǒʊ ýŋƨ

ƨĂƥùƙ ǴiŋǀǄǑŽÜ‡ù!ƥǕĵĂ ƥŊĵĂT!ƒ Ɣƙƨŏ Ŋǂ! Üýƙƥ‡dǎǌŋ

!ǄǴĵǕƒ ǀƨT Ǵǒ Ă Ɣǒʊ!ƒ ýŋƨ!ƒ ýĂơ KǴĵʊ!ƒ

!ƻ pĂdǯɣƶT ƊǑƼŊǀƽʟ Ɣǒʊ!ƒ ýŋƨ!ƒ ƥŋǒĂ

Ĭ ƙơ Üĵƥƶ ǴǂǮǀƽǄǮƥŊĵĂT!ƒĂ‡!ƥǕƒ Ǉǂ! …ƏƨhŊǵ

ƥǴ‡ǒĂ ÜƨǴĵĂ ƨƙŋƽÝŊǴƒƨhʟĂƥT ǒǕ ÜŊƺ Σ Ǵĵ ƔƨƊ

!ǴǂƙƨǒƊǮǨƒ‡dǎǌŋ!Ǵƻ ƨƙƶǒ

‡ùT ǀhĵǨǀƙdǯǴĵ !ƒ ʟdǯT Ǵĵ ƥǯ ýǴǯ ÜƨPǒĂ

.. Ǆǵǯ

.ʟĵʊ ǄǮƼ‡ ƥơ Ǵǯ‡T ǀ!ƒ ǀƨ‡ƘĂ

‡ùdǎǌŋ ƔǴ‡ƙƨǴǔ ƨT dǯ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ Ǆŋĵ Ư ƶ!ƥ ʟǂĂ

!ǀǀ ǴǊĵ‡dǯŋĵ

ǀƨƱƥ ý‡hǀʟĵʊ ǄǮ ƨơ Ư Ǵ ĭ Ƙƒ ƨT Ǵĵ ƥǯ ʟ‡!

Ǖ ƨùT dǯ ƨ‡ ƶ ǄǴĂ Ĭ ƥƨƊĬ ǄǮǴƽ ýT ơĂ ÜŊĵǯ ʟdž

ÜƏƨùhǒ ƨùT dǯ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ ʟƊĵŊ‡dǯ ʟǂ ÜŊǴ hĂ ŊǮǴT!

!‡dǎǌŋ!ƒ ǀƘŊʟdǯɣĂ ƶǒ ʟĵƥƊǯʟdǯɣƘƒ ǀǴƨhʋ

!ƔƘʊ!ƒ ǑŊ.. Ǆǵǯ‡T pKʟǂĂ

***

ĜĺLǿģǫ Kὺ ʂDĽŢD ʃoȸLj L ǂL jDĔǻǂ DǿǻǻƵǦǩǎ ʃ KᾹLǥǂĂ

.ʃoȸDȘĜĺLD

ǂὺ ǒĐǂŽŎ5Üʃʅ ʃȘʃdʃ ĆĜǩĿǚ ʃʃǂǂʀ Ǔʃ Ŏ5ÜĜǩǩdǰǩǰǳ KᾹLǂǰĂ

. ɣȘoʻ!ʃ LǂǥȘD

|| ὺ!ʀŎὺ5ὺ yŎʀ kDǮǥǞŽǦǰdǍǂʅ ʃȘʃdʃ DǍǂdǩǰL ǂ!Ă

Ŏ5ɜ ʃkKᾹLǥ ŎKʃ ǂǂȘʑdǰʓ ýǍʊ ŎLǂDLƵ ʃʅ kLDὺ DǍǂʃ

!LǰŎʅ ĐȘŽ

ÜĜǩǰὺ TDĬ ὺĐŽǂýĜǩ!ʃ ΘǍȘĂ Üʓ!ĜǂʅĜǳʃ KᾹLǥǂĂ

LǰdǯʆǍȘǂ LǂǥĂ .LǰĜD!ʃ ƱĜǔ !ʃ LǰdǯĜǰǔdǯ LǰʁĜ ǍʅP

LǰdǯǒǰP Ŏ5Ŋ!ǫLǍĐǯŎ ȘʃȘoǕʃ ƱĜǔ !ʃ DǍǩǰŎ5ĜǰǍPǫ

ʃὺŏȘŏ ǋLǰὺŎὺ LǂDŎ5DǰǯoʃǍʃ Σ dǯǰ ÜǂȘ!ʃ LǍǯŽ

!LǰŎʅ ĐȘŽŎ5ýĜǩDŽǍŎKʃ

.. Ŏʅ ʂLǰdǯȘǒ Ŏ5KᾹLǂǰĂ

.ĭ ȘǂǂʂkYʂĜǩlȘǒǂ ýǰʃǍŽ || ĜǰǰKᾹLǥ

ǂȘPǓʃ ĜDYǍŎKDýǋ

ǓŊʃǒ Ŏ5ʃʀǒʓʅ ĜǂʃdǯýdǯĐǍ ÜǂǒʅȘ!ʃ Ŏʅ hǔdǯýĐȘD

ǂǂȘʑdǯĬ !ǫŎǔ dĐǍ

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

Lիu dž ýĂǴǾLùƞ ǴĹLIJIJÜ+hŋǾIJŽƞ Ǵdž Ŏ5Dŋž ƥ+ƌLĵǴƥĂ

ƐùT ƧùPƈLĵǴĂ .Dŋž+ƧzdžǾǴLǗ Ǵƞŋ ýHƚLIJÜƧNǴƒ

:ƧǴ!ƒ || ƧoŏLIJýhƥÜLĵ ơ LĵǴƒ ýǴ+ž NǴƥŽ

D+ž KǴIJŽ+ŏDƨ oǓDƨ Ăƞ .Ŏ! ƚ zǴƨǴT Kŋoƒ ƒƥ

ÜLĂǴ ŋǴƒĂ ý+ƒĂǴƒĂ Ü ƥǴ!ƒ LĵĂƧ!ƒ || ƧLLĵĂ .ƫ ŏŋ!ƒ Ŏ5

!D+ǴƧƱ ƽ Ăzŏ

.. ƧǴ!ƒ || ƧoĂ

.. ýǴǴǗƒ ƱƧ5Lĵdž ŋǴ ǴĂƥŽ

!ŎǴŏ !ƍǴǴĂŏ ƥZDDĂ

Lիu dž K hDŽĂ .ƚŏǴĂŏƒ ƨ ơƫ !ƒ ă ƥơƍ Ɣ ǴK ƥƧƱ ǴǴĂ

ƧǴƞ ƨ ù ƫ Ă NIJ Ɣ ǴDLĵǴŎ! Ǵƞžŏ LIJÜǴƥƧoK Ʃ ǴƧ

!LĵǴƞ DŽ!ƍNĵǴdž ƧǴ!ƒ

!ýǴǴǗƒ ƱƧ5Lĵdž ŋǴ ýƒƨ ǴŽhƥŽK ƫ DŋĂ

.. lƧNǴƒ ƚƱodž Ŏ5ƚ ƥơ ǴdžK hǴĂ

ƧĂƥùK LIJƧùUǴIJÜ+ƨŏùƫ !ƒ Ƨƒƥ Ŏ5 ƒǴNǴ KDDŽĂ

!NǴǴ Ǵž+zƱdž Kǘŋ Ž

.. lƧNǴƒ Ŏ5ýƒƨ LĵǴžĵơLĵ ĂǴžŋƫ DǴƞ KǴĂ

!LĵǴƞ DŽ5ǴoK KLǴ ǴǴ ZDL+!

..ƨƵƓƒdǰĂ ƨǤƸǕƒ Ljdžǭǰǻ ǑƼƫ ǒƶLJǤǰ

ǗƔ ƧùơǃƒLJǦǂƧƊǂǬǮǐǫ ǰǼƼ LJDǴjýǿ DǍǩKƒƦǍ

LJǾÒƪ ǁƼǨǙǴdǩƒ LJƼ ƳƒƥƠdǰ KƥǍƒ ýhƥǕǃƤǨ 2 Ǎƪ

ljƥƶhǴǂǦƧNjǕǾƪ hǕǃƤǨƒ ýǤƥƒ LJǤǍ .ƒƦnjǑƣ |Ǩ

ǷƧ ǴdǰǴjǑnjǬjLJǾƉƧ ƨƶǃj

.ǂƪ ƥǤǃƒ ǂǬǂǴƼ ơǨDLJǰǕƤǰǙƒ Ǒǃ KƧƥƪ Ǎ

ǂǬǂǴƼ ơǨǑǮǂǃ ǕƤdǩ DǩơǃƒƥǂǃƧǰǙƒ KƧƥƪ Ǎ

.ǂǯƪ Ǵƒ

ƽùơǨǑǮǂǃ ǕLJǾƒ Ǐ ǒơdǩǴƧǂƨ Ǐ ǃƼƧǰǙƒ KƧƥƪ Ǎ

.Ǐ ǃǍǙƒ ǂǬǂǴƼ

..ƥǍƥǃƒ Ǐ ǁǮǴjǍƀǂ ǖƛƒ ƔƑǂǃƒ KLJǤǍ

Ǐ ǨùǃƒǴdǩLJǾƒ NjǍ Ǐ ǁǮƧ ƨǒǑLJdǩǴjLJǂǑDǩ

ǃǂ ǁƥǫǰDǴǙƒ NjǑǨǬ

ǕLJǴdǩƒ ýnjǩLjù ýǴǂǑǏ ǁǮù ǂǕǙƛƒ LJơLJǤǍ

.ƥǍƥǃƒ Ǐ ǁǮǴǨǂhƽơDǮDƴǑǨ LJǑǂǃ

čĒ DǍǩùǒlƧNǰƒ ƧƥǤLJLJǰnǴjlƧƥǴ ǃƒ ƧƥǰǙƒ KLJǤǍ

.čĕĐĔ ǍǒǴž

.. ƨƓƙǗǰƒ ϧ ŏƮk Lǂk DǮƦƫ Ɠǆž Lǂ!Ă

Lǰu dŽƯ ǒu ƫu ǗƟƓǘ ƮƬ ý‡ ǗƓǅƓk ƻ ơƮ !ƒ KǇLǅ ƫǆ5

|| ƓǆǰKǇLǅ KǇƿǍƒ Σ ƫLǰǑ5Ă . LǰǑƮ ƉǅǮ5 ǎ ƧƞǒƓǅ Ɠƫǰƒ

ǐ ǆƒ ǑƭžƧ!ƒ ƻ ƿǍdǅ LƵ ǗƚƧƓ ƙdžǰǍLǰĂ lƧǑǂ KǇƓǰƑƙ

.KǇƿǍƒ || !ƦǑ5ǂǒƧƮ dǅǂdǍǂơ!ƒ ǰƦƤƙ

Ơƭ ƒĂ ƐƬ ƻ ơƮ !ƒ Ǒ5 lǰƧ|LǰƓǰ Ɠdž Ɠ{ LǰdǰǒƉǍ

Lǅ ǗLǰǑƮ ƉǅǮ Ƨơ ýǍƤƿ ýƓǅƒ Lǂ!Ă . ƿǰƿƙƒ NǰĂ Ĭ ƉǅŽ

.ƓǰƿƓǆƓǆƓǍơ Lǅdžǂ Ǒ5ƧǍƵƬ!ƒ LǅĂ . ƧnǰǑƬƞƿ

ǗLƒǜǒdǅǂƞƿơ ýdǅƉǍƓdžĒ ƟƓƫ ǑƙǒƞKǇƧƿƻĂ

KǇǜLǅĂ ǗƟƓƫ !ƒ ǂƫǒƮ ƫƒǍdǅ ǎ ƿơƫĬ ƉǅŽKǂƧk LƉƿƵƞ

LƵ Ƨƿ ƮĬ ǆƒ ǗǰĂǕƒ ǑƭžƧ!ƒ ƺǕ!ƓǂƑƓdž !ĂǕƒ ƓƙơƫƮ

KǇƓǒƉǅƒ ǂǜǰƞƩ ƓƉǍǍƧǒǗKǇƿǍƒ || !ƦǑ5YƓǰƒ lƧƒƨĂ

.LǰǑƮ ƉǅǮ5ǂǒƧơ!ƒ

ƿƓž ýƓdž ǐ ǍƧǒǂ|ǒƉž ƧƵƓdǍǂƿƓ{ Σ Ɠ{ Ɠǆǂǂ

:ýǍ|ǒNƙǒơ Ǒ5ǂǑƤǒƧƙƒ KǇƓơƉƙǇƦNǰƧƮ Ɠƒ

LƦƭĂ . ƉǅǅKǇƓƧƿ ƨƫƉƓǍ ɣ ǒƧ Ƨ ƧǍƵƬ ǑLǂƉǅĂ "

Ĭ ǜ!ǥlƧƓ{ !ƒ ǑƞKǇnǰƙƒĂ ǗƔƓ!ƒ LƒƿǒdǍ !ǥϧǒƧƯƒ Ǒ5Ɠƫ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

ýĂPþ þďžLǇĞďǇđďžǋ ǇŔĞĩ!ƒ LǇdžǒǂþ ƒþž þTơǒ D!ǇŔĞdž

ĦLǇŏǅ[[illegible] ƧƠ

ǋùǇŔĞǂ NǇLǇdžǇĂù ǂKǑǂ! ÜǕǓĞƠǕƒ Yþǩ ǒDǇŔĞdžĂ

Ƕýηž Ĭ [illegible] LǇþǒdžĬ !ǥy[ƧKÜǇþǒη

ÜLǇǒÙ[[illegible] ĞďdžýǕƒ Ǒǭž!ƒ 3ǔhǇþ ƻ Ƭ ǒǇŔĞdžDž

Ħ ǒǇǒn[!ƒ KĞǇ ž!ƒ ǋ ǒþ ǂDž þƨηdžǇĞ [illegible]

.. ýĞ ǂǒD Ĭ [illegible]

Kþù[Ă Ğǒdž KƒĂηǅƒ KǕdžLǇDǂ [illegible] Ğdž!ƒ LǇ5

!ĞǇǇηĞdž

LǇDǂ ùh[illegible] ƧŔdž KƒĂηǅĞ [illegible] ƠǕƒ Lǂ!

Ƨùnǉdž LǇĞǂ .ƫ ǒƨž!ƒ Ĭ !ǥƧĞ!ƒ ý[Ă Ğdž ÜĞǇǥþǆž

Ǒù5Ĭ ùþǖKǒ|| !Ğ!ƒ ý[illegible] Ǒ5ǂþƧĞƒ [illegible] ηƧP!ƒ

LǇþùǒdžǂǒ[illegible] [illegible] ŔLǇĞ ǑKƒ ǂhǒƒ ydž[illegible]

.KĞďdžǇ

ýùPǇþ ĞLǇdž Ğ[illegible] K KLǇĞ KĞ þĞdž Lǂ!Ă

ǋηǒLǇĞ Ĭ ŔƒÜǑƧơ!ƒ ýdžƒ Ďdž Ĭ !ǥÜǑηƧP!ƒ Ƨnǉdž

Ĭ !ǥĞǇTƧǒĂ[illegible] LǇdž| ĞǇLǂǒDž.[illegible]ƒ NǇ[illegible]KLǇD

yùǇĂdžLǇǒDǕ ƧþLǇLǂLǇDǎ.NǇ[LǇLǇD[illegible]LǇǒĬ Ŕƒ

ʃʅǋuơDƥƞLʃDǯ.Gʃɟɟ+ơDLʐƊyǒǕƦ Lǰ ƙơ ÜƯnư !GǔƐƘʃƥơǍ

!yɲǍdʐ lʝƦNǰ !ǫƐʃʈƧǒLƊyǒǕƦ ǒ

.. ɫ|ƱLʤʐɫʕ ƓƧ Ĭ !ǫƐɟNʝǍ

Lʝu‡!Ǎ.ɫùlɧʃɸʃ ɫ‡Ƨơ!GǔLʃƘýơLɟǒƊƵƓǸʝǍʅ ƦLʝƐɟǍ

!ƥơDGɟʝu‡ǒDǯ|ƱLʤʐɫʕ ƓƧ

Gʝɟɟùʕ ǒǓ ǕƯ ƧǕʃ Lʝudǯz|hǓ5ƧǍɳnɟǯƘǒuGʝɟ‡

!ƧTɦ

ƱɦGƴ !ʃ LɟƐ .. ɫ|ƱLʤʐɣ Ƨơ LɟƐƧDǏ ƊƵƓʒƵ LʝƥơǍ

!ƝʝɟLʝƇƑz LƵ ɫ ơɦǒɣƇ!ʃ

! ƊƵƱ GƐɟuLʝdǯƐʝdǯ Lɟ Gdǯ ƊƵƓɟu Ʀ ʃǍ

KùǒɟƥǓù5ýɳnƊǯƓƐɟƥƓƊǍ GƘɟƥơư KʃǍʅ ƊKLɟƐǍ

!ƧǍɳnɟǯ

.. ɫɦǒƧ ƧƵƓdǯǪ ɟLǪ5GɟʃʅǕ KLɟƐǍ

ƝʝɳǍ Ĭ ƊƵ.GɟƘɟ‡ yɲǍdǯƇƑz!ʃ ƥzɦƧƓƤǕʃ GƘƓɳǍ

!LɟƥǮƘʃ

.lƨƩ Ǒ5ɫʐʅ Gʃ ɫɦǒ‡!ʃ KLɟƐ

.Ĭ !ǍǕʃ ɫɦǒ‡!ʃ || !ɫ‡Ǎ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

KͲƥƨǍ . ƓƘǍ ƥƨƘǓƓƘǍ ƠǍƓƘƒ ƧƥƮ Ɗ . ƧƞƘ!ƒ ƥǍǍ

:ýǍù|ǒlƧNƓƒ ǑƼyǒƊƓǍƧ Ɠǚ ƞhƥƞƘ . ƠƧ Ĭ !ƍǂ ǂǂ!ƒ

!ƟƓLƘƧǍƞ|Ɠƒ" ƧǒƮǂ ǒƊǍ KͲƊǍ ƓƊ

LǑƧNƓƲ ýǒ ƮƓƘ LƘdǍKͲzǒƮ ĭ ƙƒ LǑƘK Ʋƒ ǓǍ

:LǑǑƞƘ

ƔƧùơ!ƒ LƊýǍ|ƘƱƓ !ƒ LǑǂǂ dǍL|| ƓNLƊ . Ĭ !ǍǓƒ

.ǂǑƮƓ ƔƧơ ..

ƓdǍǂ LƘǍƓdǍƮ ƓǍ ƓƘǑ ƓǍ dǍƒ |ƘƞƘ LƓǍ

.ƊƘǍơ ƒǍƊ

!ƓƊơ |ƘƞƘLǍǂƘ LƊǍǍ|ƶdǍǂǒƊǍ

.ƥƬƘƘ KͲƒǍƥǓ

.ƧƑƓƘƒǍ ǂơƊǍƒ ǑƼKͲƒƒƶƘ ƒ Ǔ

......ƱƱP Ǔ

.. KͲƓƓǂƘ ƒ Ǔ

!KͲƓǍƶǍǓǍ

!ýƓLƒǒdǑƼƓƞƊƞ||!ƘydǍ

!ǂǑƓ ƔƧơ ǑNj.. Lƥ

!ƔƧơ ǓǍ.. ƔƧơ LƥǑNj

.. ƨʈ Lǰǘhʚǂǩ

.. ƚdžNjǘhYĂŋƨĂ

....Ʊʅ5ƚǒ ǭ ɣƨơ ǑNj

Üƨ ù!ǒk K'Lǂ K'Ǧ!ǂǉǆ LǰdžǒƱǦDLǰƚǒǂƒ ƚdž!ƒĂ

.ƚǒƨǂʅ ʑ!ƒ Ăʚʑ!ƒ LĂƿýĂơ

Lǂk DǂǍ .ƨĂŋLǰƒ lƨdžǂʅ dž dǍǂǉdžK'ƒĂ!ƒ K'ƒŋĂ5 ʚ!

LǰDƨ ǂ ăĂƨǒÜǂǰdž LǰdžǂNjƒĂ K'ʑǒʅžĂ ǂʈ ǂǰʑ ƨ ƨʑk

Üɯ ƨÜƒ ƆƱùʅ Ĭ ù!ƍyù DǂǨ K'Lǂ ÜǂƨŋǂǂǉýdžǨ ǂƒƨhD

ǂǂhƨŋǂǂɯ ƨÜƒ K'ok ƱmǩDǂÜǂǨƒ ýǂ Ŏ5ƨǂƒ ƺ DǂĂ

!ǂǒD

..ƚ ǂǒ!ƒ ƒʀNjŎ5ǂƨKʈdž ǂDDǍ

.K'Ăǂʅ !ƒ yƱʀ DDŽŎLǂĂ

:NǂDǂǂdž Ĭ !ƍK'ʀƒĂ

LǰDyǒƱùʅ kǗ || LǰʀǂǂŋǂǂǉýdžǨ ǂǰDK'ʀƵ ƨ ǂ

ʚùƵƒĂƿK'ʈ ơ5Ă ÜƨdžǂƚdžK'DǂǂK'Lǂ ƒʀÜƍÜʀŋyƱʅk

ʀ|| !ʀK'DǍýŋʆ.. ǂƨhÜƒ lǰʀNj

!ǂǂdž K'ǂʅ Ă

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

الفصل التاسع

Lǰŏ̀Ù ĩ ĐǮǯ Ƨù ơ ŎƼƧƬ Ǥǆ ƥǆǌ ýǴǆž ĐǞǶýǠĐĶ'Lǵ

Ǘǉ ǴĹLǋǰ Ƨù Ƭ ǆǅ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ ýǴ Ï ĐŽŽǊ ǆǉ ǆĐǂǒ Ǒǂ! ǗǒǓǴ

|| ƧǴǆǅ ǈƦǋ ŎƼǗ ǒŋ!ƒ ƒƦǋƧǓǨǩ+ƛƧǴ +ǑĐǅǃƦǂǆǈ ƧǒǠ

.+ǑƤǒƧǰ

Ï !ǥ+ǥǈ ŎƼƧƼǴ ï ƙƒ ǗƧƬ Ǥǆ ƥǆǌ ýǴǆž ƻ ƬǨƒ ƥ5

ǴƧ‡ƨǍ Ƨǆǅ ĐǂǑ!ƒ ƥǆǌ yǆžǗƥơƒǍ ĐǍŏŎƼǗLǰŏ̀ ĐǮǯ Ƨơ

LǍǅɣ ǯ Ƨơ!ƒ ǈƦǋ !ǥ ǯ Ǌǩ ï ƧƬ ǆǅ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ LĎǗLǰŏƒ Ï ǒǆž

.ǊǄǋĐLǅ +ơư ƒǍ ĶǴǍǅǆǯLǍƥǍ ǗǒǓǴ Ķƒǃƥƶ ƒ

ǗLǰǒǰǅƬ Ǘƒ LǍ Ƨǂǃ ŎƼ lƧǂ‡ ĶǤ!ǴǆƧ Ƭǩƒ Ǵǅ

+ǂǂơ ĶǴǍǅǆǯǍŋǍ ĐǅǗǊǒĐǴǉ ǴĐLǵ ĶǤ!ǴǆŎǋǍ

.+ǒ‡ǈ ž!ƒ ĐǍǷLǅ ǍĐǗĐǅ ï ƧƬ ǆǅ ţ ǒŋ!ƒ ǎƥ

+LǵǅĐý‡ǗǋǂƦ ǆǯǒǈ ǩ ƧƬ Ǥǆ ƥǆǌ ýǴǆž ýƬ ƒǍǒǍ

ǋǍƬ Ǎ LǆǅǑǵǂǆǗLǰŏ̀ ĐǮǯ Ƨơ ŎƼǊǴǆǍǒ LǅǗ ƥƬ Ǎ

:ýǍǀƼǴǰǥ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

...... [illegible]

.... [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

! ...... [illegible]

!...... [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

!.... [illegible]

***

[illegible]

K'Lǂj ŎLJ̣ĴÜŎdẰǸjLJdž ʂPŏLǂɠ̆ ɲ5ýGǿ +ŏDĬ DŽĂ"

ŎùLJ̣ĴĂÜlƨùƹ Ŏ5Ƨdẑ Dǂo!ʄ ɲƶhŏ|KD2 Ă̦ ŎLJ̣ĴDŽĎ

ǂlŏǂD̃Ž Ƨơ LǂɠƧǂ NĴDŽĽǂɠ ɲ5ÝGǂĵĂ dẑNĵĴŽDŽD2 Ă̦

."DǂKǂdẑǂɠ5ýơLj ŎKʄ yɲĂdẑǂˀ ɲG!ʄ

Ŏù5ýùŏĂƱǂ ǂɸơ Ƨdẑ Dǂo!ʄ ɲƶ LɲĂ ŎLǂLǂɠĂ

.Ŏ! GĴDŽǂLĴNĴDŽĽǂɠ ŎKʄ yɲĂdẑǂ2 ĂƱLJ LɲLĂ Ülƨƹ

Gdẑ GǂmĴĂŏLĴŎ DŽŽ5ylƧŨʄ ɣ ʄKǂ!ʄ yɲĂdẑK'LǂĂ

:ŎDŽ

.lƨƹ Ĭ !ɡŎƧ Ldžǂ Ƨơkdž.ǂˀ ɲG!ʄ ǂlŏǂ!ʄ

Gǂŏǂ ýĂʅ Ă ɲƶhlƨƹ lƧɲƷdžɲƶ ƙ..ǂẑ Ʀʄ ǂlŏǂ!ʄ

.Gǂɡ

Ŏù5ÜDẑdẑʄ Ĭ !ɡLǂƧơkdž.ǂŏĴʄĂ Ĭ !ĂŪʄ LǂKŏǂ!ʄ

!..ŎDŽ!ʄ ǂŏƧƱ!ʄ Ĭ DŽýɲdẑlǂKʄ

.. Ŏʅ ɳʄĂɳƨdẑ Dǂo!ʄ ɲƶ K'oƧG ŎLJ̣ƧǂKĂ

Lɲlùj5ÝGLǂĂ|! lƧẑhǂŏDŽ ‖ GǂNjLĴÜΣ ơDK'Lǂj ɲ5

ǂLùjʅ ơdẑK'ʄƧdẑùˀ dẑ‖ ƧKĂ ÜDŽ!ʄ ýɳj!ʄ Ĭ DŽDǂLj

!...GǂĴʄĂdẑĂƱPĂ ÜŎƹƬ!ʄ GǂGǂ ɲɲǂ ÜGǂɲ ɕƧĂ

Ĭ ù!ǫƚù ǫǳǩdž Nǰ ƙǿǂ ydž ǳdž Dǿǂ!ƒ ƥǳǒ ǑǂǰǨǩǍ

ƥù ǳhǕƥǿǰ ƨǿƥ Ǒ5ƚǂƨǳdž Ɣ ŋƒǍ ǴǿǳǮ ǈǂ ǑǨƒǍ ÜǳǭǮƒ

!Nǰǿŋǳ Ǒ5K'ǈǂ Nǰŋ 2 !DǑǈǿǮǈD

yǒǑǨ DǴǳǂ ÜNǰŋ 2 !Ǖƒ ljǨŋǰ ƨǨ'DǈDŇǳǮǈǂǍ

!ǈǍǨǿǍ ǈǰǿ ǈǰdžǰƒƨT

ÜƏƨƒǍù Ʊ K'ǴǈǿǨǈǿǿ|ƙdž ƥǍù ǈŋ!ƒ ă ƥ ǈǂǒDǍ

yǒǑù ƙǕ ƚ ùǒ ǕùǒǳǮƒ ƨù ǂƒƨdž Ǒ5ǴǿǳǮǈǍǿǳǒ

!DǳǫýƮ ƙǈDƚǈǍǴ!ƒ K'ǴǿǍƒ

K'ǴǰǍ ƨù ǳǒù 5ƨù ǂǒǈDÜǰƨǑǴ ƥǒDƺ ǂǒǳDǍ

DǳǰDǰǍǳǫ ǈƒ ýǂǍ .ǈǰƨǴdž ƥǍǈŋDǈǳǕ!ƒ ƏƨƒǍƱ!ƒ

.Nǰŋ 2 !ǳǴǫƒǍǳƕ

!ǈǍǨǍƚǈǰ ƒǍƨǨƒ :ǴǰƒǍǴǍ

ÜǈǍùǨ!ƒǍ ǈǰùŋ!ƒ ǈǰǳƨƐ Ǒ5ǈǂ ǴǳǂK'ǒƨǨƒǍ

ƚǈǰƮ ơ!ƒ yùǰǍdž DǳǴǿĭ ǈƒ ĭ ƥŋ!ƒ Ĭ DǳƏǍƨŋdžǑǰǳ

ƨǍù ơŋǂ ƨù ơŋ Ǒù5ýǂǕƒ K'ǰǍ Σ DǳDǳǕ ƨǴ!ƒ ljǨ ŋƕ

!ǈǰ!ƒ ǈǰǳǒǰƯ ƨǰǒǕǈƒƨƒ

2 !ǳhǕǈǍǨ!ƒǍ ǈǰ!ƒ ǈǰǳNǳǴǳ ǴǳǂǴǨǨƒ

.. ǴǫƒǍ!DNǰŋ

!….ƒĂƧŢ ƙ:ƐǀƌĂƗƍĂ

:ƝƌƍƋ Lǀdžƥƥ ý‡ ŎƼŎhƨ ƙnjƟĂƨƞdž ŎhƥŽƌƍĂ

!…ƐƌƂơ Kˆƫ ǒ.. ljƦNj

ƚù‡Ƨƶdž K ƒƧĂŬƘƽ ơŬƊƖƨƸ ŎƼLƌƍdžŎƼƐƌĂ KƮƥĂ

.ƚ|ǒƥh|ǒƥ ƓƌơŬƊŸƶƓƙ KƮhƥƥ KLƍ ŎƘƒ ŬƥƍƮǀ Ƨƥ''

.. ƥƶŃLƵ yƼƥdžï Ăƥ yƍŽƊ KLƍ ƥƼ

ŬƖĂù ƼƊƥùƶhƌƒĂƼƊLĂƊŽơ ƓƌƧ Lǀdž ơƧƞ!ƒ LƌĂ

Ŏ!Ɠǒ Ʃ ùƶƘƊĂƓƓdžƊČ ƚù ƊŽ KLƍĂ.ƖƨƸ ŎƼƮƦ dž !ƍ

!…ŎƘƓơ

ƖƦƪŬƒĂ Ŭ ƧƩƫ ƶ!ƒ ƖƨƸ ŎƼƮƦ džŎƼƚƊŽŽƦNjKǒƴ ƥ

ýƒƨùƙƓdžŎƘƒ ''ƥƍƮǀ Ƨƥ''ƚ‡Ƨƶdž ơƧƞhƚƑƊŽ!Ăơ ƓƌŽ

!..ƖƧdžƦ dž

ƖƥƓǒ!ƒ NƥƥùƫƊŬƵŬhyǒƖƧNƌƒ ĂƥƒƧĂ ƒƦNjý‡

ŬƥƮǀƫ Ƨùƥ ƖƧdžùƫ dž KƊƵ ƐƌĂƥ LƊNƼýĂƙŬdž!ƒ

!……ƖƓdžƓƒƧ ƐƓƥ ƓƍdžƥĂ

!….ƚdždžh‡ ljƦNjKLƍĂ

***

ƔƧùơ ĿĵƱƵ ƝǰƘƒƧǂƦďžŎƼ ƧƮ ƇƑĵ ƥƕž ýƓďž ƊƫžĂ

ƘƳƚǂƒ ŎƦƒ Ǜ ƧƮ ďž ƫ, ǒƞ!ƒ ƖƥƓ! ýoư !ƒ ǎĂƦ ďž ĿǰŌ ƊƵŽ

.ƖƧƝƒƒ ĿƍďžƠư ƒĂ ĿĂƓƘ ŎƼǛǂƧzďž ƧǿƘ

:ƧƮ ƇƑĵ ƥƕž ýƓďž ýƓ

ƓƖƊĂ ǗŎĿǧ! ƓƪƱư ƒĂ ƧƞĵǒƝƗŽ ƒƥďžŎƼƨ ƥĂďž Ŀƒƒ

.. ƖƨƸ ŎƼĿƒƓďžŎƼ

ƚùǒƓ ƘƓùƱư ƙ ƥùƶƕǒƥǰ ƧǿƊ" ƚǂƧzďžƘ ƞƒĵ ƥ!

.ƇƒĂ|ƕƷǒƘ ƘƳƚǂ ŎƦƒ ƔƵƓ ďž ýǂ ƊƸžƕƱƧƮ ĿƓƱ

ƊǕ|ƘƓǖ !ĂǕƒ ƚƕƞǂƊŽƍƒĂǕƒ ƘƧƥƮ Ǜǂƨzďž ƥƶĂ

.. ýƥƞďžĬ !ƍ

.ƥĂƞ ƊĬ !ƍƚƶ ƇƒƚƕǂƥƒƘ ƍžƘĂ

ƍùƮ ĿƓƘǗƓǓ !ĂǕƒ ƚƕǂƊĬƥƞ ƧƍĂƊƘƧƥƮ ƊŽ

."ĿƥƕƞƘǒ"ƱĂ "ƓĂƇƒ" Ă "ĿƒƥĂ ƺƒƧƵ" ýǕƙoƒĂ

ŎƦƒ ǗƘƒƧĂŎƦƒ ĿƦƝĵýƕƊƓĂ ǗĿƥƒƙ ƥƼƊƍƓƊƘĿǂĂ

ƓƞĵƇŌ ƇƒĂƥ|| ƧoƘĿƊýƕƓƮĿƘĿƧƝƒƒ ƨ ơƮ ƘƳƚǂ

!ĿƒƥďžŎƼ

ýƓďžǕƒ ĿƦùƝĵĿĵďž ƥƞƒ || ƧƥƊĿƊýǒƦƮ ƊĿǂƊƊž

!..ƇƍďžǂSƒ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

Ǵıdžǎ ƨùPDýǫƒǍƵ ƨǒǼk K'ơk ƻ ƨŢ ƙǒ ǍNjǴƖǆǍ .Lƒƥǒdž

!Lƒƥǒdž ƻ ǍƨƲ Ǒ5Nǰƥơ LƵ ǴNjƶnD

!Ǎƥƶ!ƒ ƚdžƨ K'ơk DňǰǍLnj!ƒǍ ƱǴǘ !ƒ ƨǍƶT Lǂǵ Ǎ

ƒRù NjLǴǂ ǗƖƧǴLǩdž ƚ!Ǎƶƶdž DǊǂƒƨdžǑ5..|| ǴǊǰ

Ǎƥù Ƶ DǴǄǗK'hǍ ƥơdžƨƶLǰž ƥNjDňǰuLǍƨƶTǒDňǎǒ

!ƚƶǒƪ !ƒ ƚǂƨơ!ƒ Ĭ DƵǄƥǵ

ɣƨùơ!ƒ" Lǰƶ ǎƨùPDıƨdž ƥǴƤ!ƒ Ǒ5 Dǆ!ƒ ƥǵǍ

!"ƚǒ Ǵ !ƒ

ƥ5Ýƻ ǍƨƲ!ƒ || DǄǑ5ï ƨǂƷǩ Ĭ !ƣƐT Ư ƺhDƒRNjLǂǵǍ

Ǵŀơ ýPƥţ ǒɳ LǰǍǴǄNǰÜnƥǴƒ ƨƶǄ Lǰžƨ ƨƶDK'Lǂ

ƚdžNjǑRƒR Ǒ5 ýǴdžƒ ƨPƈK'LǂǍ . ǴǄ5DǄNjǕƣƚǒ Ǵ

.LǴǍǒƒ ƚǂƨƶdžǑ5"ýƺǍ"

!....Ǵŀơ LǍǂkLDɣɳǒɣƨơ!ƒ Lƣ

!... ƥǍLnj NJ Σ ǒ Lǂ!Ǎ.. ƥƒǴǰLǂǵǍ

K'ƒǍùƥƒǍơhŢDƚ ǒơhǂƶƪ ƒǍ ƚnǰɲ Ĭ DƵǄDǊƶhNǰ

!Ʊɿ5Ǵǰ Ƽǂ ǒǴdž Ǒǂk ƥǒT!ƒ ýǒǴƒ ydǄǴk ǗƪƒƨơŦ

LǗ ǗƨùƸ YǴƱƥǴǄǄDLǂuƨǴǍǗƒ Ǒ! K'DƵǍǍ

."ƥǍƪ Dƨǂƒƨdžƙơk ǍǗDǴǄƒ Ĭ !ƣDǂkLDǴǄLǂ Ǵǂ

.ƨƣǆǕƒ ǀǰȐǹǰǈƥǅ ∑ Ƈǰƒ ƥǓƊǨ'ǈǂǍ
ƚù‡ƨzdǅƯ Ǎù'PǈǍ ǕǍƥù z!ƓǑǀǦƊǮ ù ƒǱǑ'Ɗù Ƈǰ
.ǀǰơ
ƥù|5ÝƨdǮ ƊǮƥo!ƒ ƥƨhǑǀǦǈ ù ǎƨPƊƖƨdǔ Ǩ'ǈǂǍ
Ǩ'ù ǈǂǍ Ü'ƥǍǈ ƊǑ5ƚƕƨƓdǅƚƕǂ!ƒ ɣƨơ ǈǂƨƊǍǋǈǂ
ǎƨù'ƊƖƨdǔ ǋǈƣǅƊǮǂ Üƞ ƥƓ!ƒ ƚƕǂ!ƒ ɣƨơ ǈǂƨǂ
.ǋǂǂ ƓǀǮǨǑǨƒ ƴƒǍdǅù
!ƚƕǂƺ ƨƣǍƊƇǨƓ ƖƨƺǈǅǂƨơǨǈǈƊýƕǍ

***

Ǒù5ƖƨǑdǍƚǂ ǒdǅƚƮ |!ƒ ƨƮ Ƈǰ ƥǂ ýƓǂ ýdǂǍ
:ýǍ|ǑǋǂǂƚǨdž
ƫ ǒùƞ!ƒ ƖƞǈǰƇǰǈƊƺǹǈǈǂǈǂǰƒǈƒ ƖƨƓƍƇǨƓ
ǈǰ‡ǨƊǍ'ƥǍƒ ɣƓƚƕ‡ƨzdǑ5ƓǨdǅǂ ï ǈƒ ǑǈƨǕƒ
.ƚ‡ƨzdǅ ǀǰǋǈǅ ǨƓǍƨǈǑƊƓ
Ǒù5ɣùǂǂ ǂƕƨƊƇǈǍǂǒǈƊǑƕ Ǒ5ƓǋǈǂǈǍ
ɣƨƓdǅƫ ǒƞ!ƒ ǂƕ ù Ɠǂǅƥoƒ ǈǅ Ï ƊǮǈƊǈǈǂƞ Ɗž
!'ƥǍƒ ɣƓǑ5ï ƨǂǈǕ ƚ ǒơ Ï !ƍƓǂ zǂǈǍù Ɠǂž

!Kˇǒʑ!DUơ!ʄ Lʅ ơ Lǰdžƍʄ̋Ǘʄ Lǂ!Ă

Ǵǰ̋ǳŽ̆L̆ǂ̋ ł ǒơ Ĭ !ǫǴǘɼ dǮ.|| ƨơk!DǮ̋ǰǳk ʄ Ĭ ǳŽǴǂĂ

.ŽǍDǑɼ džǰD

.. 'ƥǍʅ D' Ĭ !ǫ

!NǰǍ! Ǵǰ̦Ă Ăƥʑ!Ǵoù ʄŖǑ̦PDù Ǒ|ƘDǯł ǒơ Ĭ !ǫ

.'ƥǍʅ DǑƼƧdǯ Dǂơ!ʄ ƥǂɦKˇǫƘʄĂ

!... lƧdžPƈNǂƧk Lǰǂž LǂǴĂ

.ł|ǒDǯ NǰǍƧĂ Ü|λʄ Ĭ ǳŽ̆ł ʑɦǑƘʄ Nǂǯ̋ƙʄu

!....ǴʅLǰǗ łǳŽ̦ǳ̋dǯǴǘɼ ƥĂ

.. ýǴƙɦł|ǒơ ǑƼlƧǯǑƼNǰʄƧƼLǂǴ

ăƧPǗʄ łǒơǴʄ Ĭ ǳŽǗlƧƽ!ʄ Σ ʇLǰǑƼǑTʄƧƼKˇʑɼ ĂĂ

.ýǴƙɦǂ lƧɳT Lǰdž

.ýǒDǰŽǰʄǍƱ Dǯ̋ǰDǍǯ

.ʄŖǒdǯǂ̦Ʃ Ăɳ!ʄ LǂǴ

.Ăƥʑ!ʄ Ɣ ƧƿłǒǴǛǯʄ ɣǰǍdǯĬ Ʈ ƥDǑƼǴǰ

ýù|LǰǗƧdǴ Ƶ Dǂơ!ʄ ƥǳƨ ƧʄĂɳǑǂDǯ!ʄ ƨǴǰ LǂǴĂ

.ł|ǒƥɦł|ǒƥKˇʄƧǍƱƘʄ Nǰǫ

ĞĺŊĚŋNjĿĴŨŀƧdžýĂŪ Ŭ2dĔ ĐğoĮ!ʃ ƥĔ ĿɉdžĶdĐĂ

ĐĞǂo!ʃ ƥùlǝ KʻƥĎĂ ."ĐƙĞĿĵƧdžɖ džĐǅƥĮʃ ŎƼyǂĈ

."ƥŧj ƧǂĎ" ŎƼýǂĿdž ƥơ ĞƵƧǂǂŏĿĴĿɉdžŎǀĐǅdĔ

.. ŎǀĐǅƥŋƧdĔ ĐğoĮ!ʃ ƥĔ ƬƥĂ

ĿĴŎù! ýĞɼĂ ."ƥŧj ƧǂĎ" ĿɉdžŊĂƧƥ ĐǅNĴĎ! ýɕ

Ŀƥùƕùʑʑƥǎ ƧŋĴNĴǂŋƧƥ ŬǂŏĔ ĿǂĎ!ʃ ƱĞƱ!ʃ ɵĂƧ

Ŀǂǂ!Ă .ĐǅŋĮʃ ĿĞǂdžǂĞĐǅǀŏĞĴƥơŏŎǂ! ŬĞƧ[!ʃ

ĂùNjĿĞĂ ŬǂʑƧ!ʃ ƓƧŋƓƯ ƼĂ ŬĂƬĶĞƧ[!ʃ ǎƥơƓƥƓ

ƱĞƱ!ʃ ĐǅƲĿǂƥƧƼĐƥơĿĞĂ .ƻ ĐǅƥĂdždžŎƬĞĂdž

!ŬŬŬƧʃƧoŪʃ

Ĭù!ƓĬ ùươ džĂŬùŋʃʃ ƥǂ ƧdĔ ĐğoĮ!ʃ ƥĔ Ĭ ĿǂƧĶĂ

!!ǂƧzdž

.. ĞǂoƬdžĚŎKʻŭƥĂ

.lƥùƥŋ!ʃ ĞǂĂdžŎƼ Ğǂǂ ýƥĂdžɣƙƧĿĴĎŊĐǅĿĞ

Ĭù!ƓĞĿǂĐǎ Ƨùŋŏĭ ƦĞŬŊĴĿKʻƥĂʃ ŎƼĐĂƺƬdžKʻĿǂĂ

ƧĞƦĐƱǀƙù!ĐKʻùĿǂĂ ŬĐǅĞƙĿJ' ŎƼýoƓ!ʃ Ĭ ĐǅɣƧǂ!ʃ

.!ǂƧzdž

.. ƧƮ z!ʃ ƥǂĂ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]
- [illegible]
- [illegible]

[illegible]

الفصل العاشر

Ư ƧƊĭ ù ƊƶŽƧƮ Ƣƙƒ ƥƶƨ ýƓǆǂ || ƧƥƊƜýƘ!ƒ ƗơƓ Ŏ5

ƥù|5Ŷ ƧƮ dǅ ƫ ǒƞ!ƒ ƓƞƔ‡Ʀƒ ǑƦƒ ƗƛƧƓ!ƒ Ƨƞ ƜǈǓƪ ƊŽ

ƜƯ ƧǕƒ Lǉ dǆƺ Ɠ ƘƓƓ dǆ ƊŽŽ ƥNǖhNƒƓ NƦŽh

Ɠǉ ư ƶhLƸ lƥƶhƖŽƓǆ ƒƧơ ƱƓǉNƒƊNƒǍƿ KƊǆĂ

Lǅ NƒǑƦ KƓǆ‡Ă Ɨǆơ ƔƧơ ýĂƤƿ ƓǉdǆǕ ƜƯ ƶƥ

!..Ɠǉ ƫLƒƪ ƒƧơ ĂNǇKƵƓƦ ƒ

Ɠƥù5ƥǉT ƜƔƧơ!ƒ Σ ƫLǑ5ƧƮ Ƣƙƒ ƥƶƨ ýƓǆǂ Lǂ!

KĂù dǆ NǉĂöLƓ ĭ Ʀƒ ƜƯƥ Ʀ ĭ ƧƮ dǆ ĭ ƥƞ!ƒ ƗƶƓTĂ

.ƧǑLƒ ƗƶƠLdǆ!ƓhǑ5ƓƦƓ

Ǒù5Ƨù Ʈ Ƣƙƒ ƥù lƶ ýƓǆǂ lƓ ƿ ĭ Ʀƒ ƊĂƒ Σ ƫLǑ5Ă

ƱƓư !ƒĂ ƥĂLƞ!ƒ Lǆ ƃƧƞ!ƒ Ʊ Ă Ü ƧƪƮ ƶ!ƒ lƨƺ ǑƧƬƦ dǆ

KƓƺǖhƴǑKǑNĂ ÜƧNƊŽƒƧ!ƒ LǆƴƦƒ ƜLƥƧƮ dǆ

Ǒù5ĭ Ƨù Ʈ dǆ ƫ ǒƞ!ƒ Ɠǉơ ǑƦƒ ƗǑNǍƒ KƒƧƓ Ʀǈƒ

.LǓƪ ƊŽ

KƒƧĂùƱK NǉƒƧ‡ƦdǆǑù5ƧƮ Ƣƙƒ ƥƶƨ ýƓǆǂ ýƞƪ ǒĂ

:ǅƒƓýƘ!ƒ LƒǑdǆ5Ɨ ƒơǕƒ

."ͳ ρǤƌƃ!ƒ Ŏ5ǤƌĝǫýƮ ƙƗ Lĝŋ!ƒ ƧǤƁƊKŢƿĥǍ"

Lǥdžǜƒ ρǤƌ!ƒ ƗƵǤ!ƒ Ŏ5 ÜýǤƘ!ƒ Ƶ ρǍhƨdžǍŪƒ ǤƘǤŋǍ

.ƗƶdžƶƗƒ ƟǤƌƫ

.Ɨǒ[Ǥƌ !ƒ ƔƧơ!ƒ LƵ ă ƧƤDĿƧdžǕƗ!ƒ ρǤƶǍ

!Ɨǒ[Ǥƌ ǤƿƠơ ǤŊƤ ǎƊDǍρƶ!ƒ Lǂ!

KƒǍρ LĦhƧǤƁŪƒ KǒƘǤýǤƘ!ƒ KρǍ ρƶǍdžýǍDƠǍýhƽ

!ρǍƫ ƮǍ ýρŋdž Lǥhƺ ǒƧƱ!ƒ KƶƱρÜǍρƶ!ƒ Lǥdž

ŎƘƒ ƨǂƒƧdž LǥdžǍρƶ!ƒ ƱƧƤLĿDÜƧƮ ƶ!ƒ ydžǤƶƱƦ ƒǍ

LĿDYǤǤƦ Ǖ ǍNjǤƌƽǏ |hǍDǍ ÜǤƒǤƱ Ǐ ƊƶǤƫƮ ơǒ Lǂ

.Ɨ Lĝŋ!ƒ lƧƦ5ýƒǍƱ ρǍƫ ƮǑ5ǤƘǍρ LƵ ÜLǥdžǍ lρŋLƒ yƚdž

yùρǍdžƗ ùǒơ Ǐ !ǥÜƧƮ ƶ!ƒ ρdž ƔǒŋƗ lƧǤ !ƒ KρǍ

Lǥdž ƊƘdžƗ ƛŋ lƧdžýǍŪ KǒƊǍ ÜNjǘƘƒ ǍρƶƗ ýǍǤ Ǐ Ƙƒ

.ƧƑƤƦ LǥdžƊǍdž ǂ ǤdžƊǍơǍ ÜƒρǍŋ

..yρǍdžƒƦNjƔƧρƗǒǤƶ lǍƌ Ǐ ƊƶǍKƫρǍǍ

.. ƟƧ[ƙǏ ƧƱƒǍƤ KŢƿhă ƧƤDĿƧdžǍ

.ρǍƫ ƮǍ ýρŋdž LǥhLǒƮ ƊƵǑ5ƗǒǤƶ lǍƌ Ǐ ƊƶǤƒƿǤŊǰ

.ǤƿǰdžǕƊǒŋƵ 5Ūƒ Ɨ5ǤǏ !ǥρƘdžƗ Lǂƒƒ Nǂƨhƨơǂƫ

ƚùzƒƒƧ!ƒ NƗƒĂƬĂ Üƴ ĂƧƺ!ƒ ƴǂĂdžŎ5 ƇƒƧdžƺ!ƒ Σ dƸƒĂ

.Ƨoƚ!ƥ ƇƒƧĂ Ʊnƣƙ

Ŏ5 Ƈǵǰƞ LƒƥĂ ÜƇƑƥžLƊ ýĂƇǵö ÜƇƥƸ Ɛ ƛƞ Lƥdžƴ Ƨ|!ƇĂ

.NƗƥŽ

.lƧƛƇƙdž ƇƙƒĂƥ ƴƒĂdž.ƽ ƧƬ!ƒ Ĭ !ƍĂ

KƇǵlƞƶ!ƒ DÙǯƧ ÜLǕƒ Ĭ ƙơ Ƈƞǰdžƴ DŽƇdžǂ KƥDŎƙƒ

ƚùnƞƥ!ƒ Dƺž .ƇǵƥƧƱ Kƥ Ŏƙƒ ƴƵƇ dƶĂ ÜƇƙnǰƒĂ Ŏƙƒ

ƴƧùo!ƒ DÙǯƧ .lƧù ƛƺnodžƚƙùTdž KƒĂ|!ƒ Dƺž .ƚƺ Ƈ!ƒ

!..ƇƞƥdžƙYĂƧƥ ǚhƴƇƥƍyƽƚƙƧƇƒ Dƺž .ƚ Ƈ !ƒ

.. ƇƙƒƇƥ Ƨ|džƴ Ăƞǰ!ƒ Ĭ !ƍĂ

!...ƚ Ƈ ƇƥơƴƧƇƙĂ .ýƇ!ƒ LƒƥdžŎ5ƫ ǒƺƙŎƙƒ

.. ƇƙdžƸ ƇƐ ŎƥƧƬ!ƒ ƴĂƞǰ!ƒ Ĭ !ƍĂ

.ƥƺƙƚ ǒơ Ĭ !ƍ ƇǰǰĂƙĂ ÜƇƥdƵŎ5DǂǒƙŎƙƒ

!ƴƧơ ÜĂ.. ƴƧơ .. DĂƶƒ ƇƞǰƒƧƍĂ

.LƥdžƒΣ Dƞdž|ƧĂǒĂLŎ5ƒƥƸƞ| ƇǰĂ

Dƞǰƞ ƇƸ5ǰĂƧƥƇƥŽ ƧƬƵ ǎƥơƍLƥdžƚƵĂdžƥdžƚ ǒơ

!...yǒƱLLƊƇƥƵĂ ÜƇƥ5ƫ ǒƺLŎƙƒƚǂƧƺdžƶ |ƙLƊ

..Ƨoƚ!ƥ ƇƒĂnǰŎƙƧ KǖdĂ

lƧŽƶŀůďž Ăƥz!ƒ ɫ ʎɳ ƨŀƶ ǕǑǨƨǤ Ĭ !ǥʃŊǴź Kʼƨʠʀʈ ƒĂ

…ƾ ŏƶƲ!ƒ Ɣƨƥ

:Ŏʈ ʒLjýʈ DǤĂ

!ŀƨʠ!ƒ ǤjŊʃPŏĭ Rʃ Ǥźă ƨk.. || !R ƥƶɧʃRǤž

***

Ɣƨùơ LɖžƧʈ Ǥʃ ƥƶ ýǤž ƥĂzŏLɗÜǤjǳŽɫŏDǮ

!..Ʊʠ5LʃŎʈ ƉŽ

Ư ƨŰʃ ljRù Nj Ĭ ùǄŽýùʈ ơŏLɗÜNJƐhPŏ&ʠ!ƒ LǤ

Ŏ5ƔƨǤdŽNǳŏLɗLɫdžDǤĂ Ĭ ǲŽĭ ǄŽɫŏǤ!ƒ ɫŏƶz!ƒ

! ɫʒŏƧT Ɣƨơ ĭ D

ƥùlƶ ýǤdž ǤǤRŽʈ Ǥ ƨ ĂNj.. DǤĂƒ ʃRNjLǤĂ

!..LʃƥŏůŽɫơǤ Ŏ5ljƨƥʈ Ŏ5ƨʈ Ǥʃ

!…ŊʒLĴ ǄŽýƱhʃ ýdŏkʠ5.. || !R DƶŽĂ

.ǤƥTŰʃ LĂǤůŽ ýzʒŏǤž ƥnǮĂ

.ǤŰʃ ƥơDNJ ơ5ĭ ƨɫʈ z!ƒ ýƥɳdŽŎ5TRʈ dŽŎ5Ă

ýŏuʈ ǤkƔKɫŏNʃƨɫRdŽŎ5ƨʈ Ǥʃ ƥƶ ýǤž Ĭ ư dǮ

:ŽʃǤɫ ƥơ Ǥž

ĭ !ǥKĽŖǮĂ LĴŖƥzhǗŎĽĮ ơ5ĭ ĸƒ ɣǒǨǓƒ ĭ !ǥKĽSUĿĴ'

!'ýĂ|ǒǤdž ƥŢ ŢŖƥǂŖǓ ǤĦĄ.. ƗŢNjƥ Ŏ5ýƥɳdž Ŏ5ŢŖ dž

KĽǵĭ Ţ ŢŎù ĸƒ Ǘù Ţ Ǥ Ƨ!ƒ Ƨ ĂƧU! NǿǮĽ LǂƒƥĮ!

!Ɨ!ĂǸǰ hýĺƥǒ LĴŖLĮdž ɣƧƩŖǗ ƧƥŢ

Ǘù Ţ Ǥ Ƨ!ƒ yư ĂdžĿĮdž ƳĂ ǤĦĄ NǿǮĽ ŖǷƥ ƥƿKĽǂĮ

Ɨ Ţ Ǥ Ƨ!ƒ LŢĂ ǗǨǤǯƟƧɳ!ƒ LŖǗ ƧƥŢ Ŏ5ŖǵƧ ǣLĴĿĮǮ

!.. ɣŖǵƥĂƥơ ĭ !ǥKĽŖǮĂ

.ǤǵǤǬ ƧǤ!ƒ ŎǿǮĮ ǨzƧĂ

.ĭ ƧƥŢ LĮdž ƽƥdž ŖǵƧ ƥĂ NĮýĂǤŖ KĽǂĮ ĭ ĸƒĂ

!.. ƥƥƧǨ ǗĂ Ɨ|ǒơ!ǤŎLǥƧǤ :NJKĽŖǮ

ǸǰŖ ƨɱǒ ĂNĂ ǗƟƧɳ!ƒ ƭ ơǬ ăƧPŖLƧdž ɣǒǨǓƒ Ţƥƕ

.ǤǰĂƥdž ǂƒƧƥǥyŽŖ ŢŢǗ|ǣƧǓƕ

.. ɣǒǨǓƒ ĭ !ǥKĽSUĿĂ

Þ...ĸǤǯƟƧɳ ĂNŖ NJKĽŖǮ

ǗǸǰŖ ƨɱǒýƒƨǒǤǮĂNĂ ɣǒǨǓƒ ŖǨƒǒ

!ŖǮǒý Ɨ !Ǥ!ƒ ĮĸNjýƛdž ƧLǗ ǤǂƧ.. ŎLǥĸƵƒ :ýǥĂ

:ŎLǂĮ ŖƛƵ

Ħ| ! Ɨ ƥơ Ǥdž ƧzkýNj

ǑǇǨǵǤ Ţ Ɗ ƥù|! ..ýùƿŰƒ Ĭ ƊƵŽ ǋǤ ǴǦǮŽ ƊǨ ƧƵƊ.ƘƊƿŽ

!.....ĭ ƧƥŢ ǑƼƗŢ Ǥ́ Ƨ

Ƕ|| ƘǤ́ Ɗ2 ǥ 2 ƧzƘýǋǇǂ!Ă.. ǑǒŢ ƒƦǋ:ýǤ

..ƗŢƥǤǮ ǇƦǉ ǒư ƊƘŢƥƲ

!ǑŢ ǂǨƒ ǇǇƶ ǤƒĂ ĭ Ɗt Ǥ́ Ƨ!ƒ ɣ ǒŢ ǒǤǂ:ǋǇƘƊŽ

. ǤǕǤǤǇ ǑǇǋǍƊ ɣ ǒǗƒ ƻǋ

ƗùǀǒƧǓƕǇǂĂ.. ƗŢ Ǥ́ Ƨ || ƘǤ́ Ɗƥ! .. Ű :ýǤĂ

ǑùƘƒ Ɨ|ƊŽ Ǉǥ.. ƫ Ǥ́ Ƨ!ǤƩ Ǥƒ ƗǫƕƗƘǤ ǥǇƵ 2 ƊƘ

ƘùǇǂ ǑùƘƒ Ɨù!ǤǍƊŽǓŢ ǳǅ ƧƒƞǤƘǒŽǓŢ ƒ || ƘǤ́ Ɗ

ƥù|! .ƫ ǤŢ ƧƊŽ ƥùơǒŰ ɣ ǒƩ ƐŢ Ǥƒ Ɨ ƥơƼǓǤǂƧƘ

ƘùŢǤĂ ǓǑǇƥǅǳ Ǥǅ Ʃ ǇƵ ǤǇ ǇŢ Ǥ́ Ƨ!ƒ ƘƊǄƒ

ǤǉǅƩ ǇǤǂƼ|| ƧƥŢ Ĭ !ǥýƤƥĭ Ƙƒ ǤŽǓ|| ǇƵ ƗŢ Ǥ́ Ƨ!ƒ

! ƱƼǑǇǅǳ

.. ƘǤǍŽƒ ǇǤǮ ƊƵɣ ǒǗƒ ƊǤŽƘ ǫƊǄĂ

ƧŢƵ ƥƶĂ ǓƘǤ Űƒ ǇǤǳýĂơ ĭ ƧƞƘ ǋƊƧǤǳƘƊĂ

:ƾ ƨǳǄ ýǂǳǤǤŢ ǇǳǓƿǑǇĂǤĂǋĂǑ! ýǤƾǤ

! Ǥǅƕƒ .. ƘƤ

Ǒù5lƧ|ƙư႐ dǨ'ùLǦ Ǒùƙƒ ƚƿdžǅ ǾǦT!ƒ K'ǂ႐ dǮǍ

.ǾƿǮǱ'ơƧǍ .. ǐ ƥǒƚơƒƧ Ǒ5Ǿǅư ǍǍ .ǐ ƧƥႢ

: Ǒ႐ ǈLK'!ǡ Lǰơ Ǎ

Σ ǂƶ!ƒ Ǐ ǄǅǍ Ƨɳ Ƨdžƒ LǊǍ! ƚ ƥơǒ LǊLǂdžLǦ ƒƦǅ

Ǿǰ႐ ǈLǂ Ⴂ Ǥ Ƨ!ƒ K'LǦǍ LǊǾ ǐ Ʀƒ ǍǋƷ ǔƷ!ƒ LǦ Ǎ! ..

!Ʀǐ ƧƥႢ Ǐ !ǥK'ŋƙƒ ǑƦƒ ǑǋǊ

.. ýƒ႐ !ƒ ƒƦǋǑ႐ ǈLK'!ǡ Lǰơ

ǄǅǅǄǾǍ Ÿƒ Ǐ !ǥLǍǂƙ Ǿǅ Ƨƿ ǄǾǅ ǅơǍƧ K'ƥɳǍ

:ǐ Ǝ႐ Ǒ5

! Ÿ ƥdžƒ

***

.... ƚƶƒƒƧ ƚǒǅǦ LǥǑ5Ǎ

Ǐ ù!ǥƒǋǅ ƧႢ Ǿƒ ƥƶ ýǾǅ Ǒư dž... ƚǄǅ ǅǑǦ hǍ

ƚƵǾ႐ Ǎ Ǖù|ǭƥhƚù|ǭƥǍ ǕƲơǄǅƲơ! ǕLǰ႐ ǄǅǑ5 ǋǰǄ

ǋǊǕK'ƒƧǂƦǅ ǉƦǋǋƧ|ǒ Lǳǅ ƶTǒ Ǐ ƙơ .ǄǅɄǾǅǍ ǕƵǦhƲ

:Lǰǭǒơ!ƒ ǾǉǾǄƴdžǋƥǾ!ƒ ǉƦǋǆ Ǽ

Ǒù5NJ ĸĞŝǂŘ LJùƵ ÜŶĨŽơ ƧƮ Ğũ ƥŝǌ ýĞĚǌ ýĚĞǆŽĂ

NJ ĸĞŋLĂ ljƧƥƮ Ǒ5ƚƮ Ǥ ƨhŬŃĜ ǫƥǌhŬýƥŋdž Ǒ5ƬŘ dž

:ýĂǀĜ5.. KΆĂdž Lǉdž

!"ǑǗĵǅǗǫĜŃ NĐǅýƥŋdž Ǒ5ƬŘ dž Lĝ"

Ǒ5ƥǒơĂƒ ýǒLƒ ÜĤĞĞ !ƒ Ǒ5Nǉǫ KΆĎƵĂ Lǉơ KΆLǂĂ

.ljƧhĞǆ ýǂ

.LƤĞĥƮ !ƒ ï ĞƮ!ƒ Lǉ dǅĞŋL5KΆhĐŽĂ... ǭǒĂƱ ĖǂĂ

ƚǀǒƧƱ!ƒ ýĂơ ƧĂƥǒ ýƒƨĞdžǑĐƵĂ ÜĈĂƥNjǑ5NǉĸơĎKΆŘƤĎ

.ĞĵǀKΆĂŋLǑŘƒ ƚhǒƶ!ƒ

ÜKΆùoĸǫƒĵƥùƿǑĸŵƮ LƊŬ Ğ!ƒ LĞŋL5ƥǌhKΆƮƮ ơƮĂ

! ƒŊƊNǉƨƶƬƊƊǅĞdž YĂŋ!ĞƨƶƬƊǑLǉĂ

......ǑĸĞơ ƚđƥƮ KΆǒĵŘǅ

!.....ĐǅƱ Ğĵǅ Σ ǒ :Ǒ! ýǒƥ Lǉơ

ÞyƑĞŋ ǑLǫ.. ƨ ǂ :ƚƬNĵhKΆƥŽ

Ĭ ù!ǫ|| dǅƱhǉ ĸǒǂ || ǒǫƚ ǌŬLƊƲ ĂƧǫdž:Ǒ! ýǒƥ

!ĞŊǉ

.. Ǒ! ĞĵƥǏ ŀƒ Ĭ !ǫKΆƧƲLǉ

Þ....Ǒĸǒǂ : ƒŘǂLǌ dǅKΆƥǅ

: ƥǿǻŋ Lǰdžƨǂ DKˆƥƶĂ

!Þ..Ǒƙǿǆǂ .. Ǒƙǿǆǂ

:ýĂƥDNǰǫKˆSULǱǅž

Þ..Ǒƙǿǆǂ ǑNjLǰǻD

! Ǒƙǿǆǂ hǑǭ ǤƠǫǑhǤ ƵDǐ !ǥĂ Ǒ!ǴƤ Ĩ !ǥlƋǹ5ƨǥĂ

ÞǑNjLǰǻD

Ǚ yùưĂǑù5ÜDǆǅǨǴǤ ƦǰdžƨdžƤǓ Ǵǰǂƨkǰ!

.NǰƵǷǭ ok

! ƚơĂǥdžƷĂǮǂdžǰĂdž ǄƵƦǮdžǴǰǂƨk

Ǔǭ Ă ýPƥk LǰRǅǅǴƥǿ Ǵǰǫkˆƨǭ ǮDƥĂ ÜǴǰǂƨk

.ljƨǮ ǴkǑǂ! Ăƥƶ!ƒ

Kùǂƨ kǑƙƒ Ü!ǴDǅǆǰƒ lƨĂǮ !ƒĂ ÜǑǭ Ʈǝ Kˆƨƨ NǰĂ

.Ǒƒǰŋ Ă ǖdžƵǑƙǿǆǂ ǴǰǅƵŽ

!..ǴƵ ḰĂǮ hǑǭ ǤLǰDǆƵǑLǰǂĂ ÜýĂƥDKˆƥƶĂ

Ǔǭ Ă ƒĂDƤƒ ǤǰƒĂǴ.. ǴǅƵǰĂƵǆ Ʀƒ ĂNǰƒRNj.. Ǆžj

!Þ..ƔLǴǰ ýǂ LǰdžǅǰǗơǒĂNǰ ÜǰĂƨǮ ǴkǑǂ! Ăƥƶ!ƒ

! ƚ ƥơǒLǱƔ ŋǒLǰǂ Ǵdž ƥơ ǰ!

ŎƘƒ ŎNjNjĂƿ K'ơhƮ ƊǕĂƥƶ!ƒ K'ƒĂƿƠ[Ă Ɠǻȷh Ʈ ƊĿƿơ

! NjĂƿƧ[ƓĿĿƘƒ LƿLƩ ǒĂ ƓƧ[Ɠk

Ȑ2 ǿ .. ƊǮj

! ƒƦNjŎ5ƒĂƧǂ52 ǿĂ

NjLǳǨ ù hƊǮ Ƕ!ƒ K'ĂŢ Ĭ ƊǮǕ ƧƠƒĂP LǳǨ|5Ă

... ýƥɳǳ Ŏ5ƮƦ ǳŎ5ƊǮŎ!ƒ

|| ǒǥǂ ƶhƅLƮƊ|| Ƙǒǂ yǳǨ'hƧ ýNj.. NǬNj:ýĂ|ǒ ĂNǨ

ȐƊǮŎhƲ

.ŎƘƼ Ĭ ƊǮƧǳǂhƮ ƘǳǮƶǳƘƒƵ2 Ţ LĂ ÜNJK'ƊǮ

ǂ ùƶhǒLǳɳk ÜƓƼ ŎNjŎƘƒ ƓǳƒĂ ǳŎ5ÜŎƘǒǂ K'ǒ

! ƊǮŎhƲ ƓǬǥ

.. ýɳƧ!ƒ Ŏ!ǥƧƲLj

! || ǳǬƊǕ :Ŏ! ýƓĂ

:ǂ TƥƓǳǮ ŎnƮƊƓĂ NJK'ƊǮ

|| ƥǮ ƥɳƊýNj.. ýƓ ǂǒƊĬ ƊǮǂơƊǮȐƊǮǳƦNjK'[ǒ

ȐƓǮŎ Ŏ! ăƧƘTǒŎǂ! ƽĂ[!ƒ Ĭ !ǥɣ NjǬLǳǮ

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]

- [illegible]

- [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

ĜŇĶłǂŏ ĹĴĎĝĳǿǴƮ Ɗ ýĂĜŏ ÜĎĎŻĂ ÜǨ ĜŇĶǩ || ĜŇijĶ ĹĢ

!.. ƒĂżɳƬƘŏĂ

ƽ Ăù 5 ŅĶ ŖĂP ŻƮ Ģ Ƨ ƘƿƧŖPƒ ÜƟŬƮ ýŏďž || ĜŇijĹĢ

. Σ ƬƧ!ƒ ƖĂƧ5 Ƙ ƿƿďž ÜŇĴƬƧ

.. ŅĶĜ ǫĂ ŅĶ ŖĂP Ƙ ĎŽĂ

!.. ƲĂƲơďŽĹďŽĂǂĎŎĹĴĶƮƮ ơƬĂ

!.. łŏƬ Ƶ łďƵƮ hɣ ŏƮ ƊƧPƇƟŬƮ ýŏďž || ĜŇijĹĢĂ

Ƙù Ĺij ĎĂžŭ ŏï Ʀù ŏďĎŽĹĢ ƥ5 ŶŅƥƵĎƘĹǂĂ ĜŅĢ ĹĢ

Ǖ ĜƗ ďžŅĶƥŭ Ʈ ĹĴďž Ʀŋŏ ĹĢĂ Üďƨơ!ƒ ł ďĦŽ Ŏ5 ƬŅƿ ďž

. Ŏżŏ

ă ƿù ƘƧŏù ƖƧďŷĂĎłďĦŽ Ŏ5 ĜĢĜ ĎĂžù ŅƿĂƮ ƘĂ

. łďƥďŽ Σ hŭďŽ

Ĝƥù Ĺŋ ŅĴžŷƖƮ ĹĴĹơĹĂ Üƾ ƧďŽ ŅďĦŽďŽ Ŏ5 ŅƿǂƦĂ

. ŽƘĢďž

! .. Ĝij ĹƥƵĹĴĜij ŎƘƒ łƖƧɳƘƒ ƫ, ďžŏƒƦ ĂŅĴĜŇĂ

. ŎĹďŽ ĹďžĂŽƒ ɣ ƧƘŏǕ ƒƦŅĢ ŅĦžŷŏƒŽ ŏư ƿĂ

Ŏù 5 Ŏù ĹƵ Ĺƥù ƶƘƥ Ŏù 5Ă ÜĎ!Ăơ ĹďžŎ5 ƧǂƼĎƘĹij

. łǂƧƶďŽ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

- [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

الفصل الحادي عشر

[illegible]

ɣƧùơ ŁĵųƵ ŃĳƙƒƧǂƦdžƵƮ ƇƓĳ ƥƅƺ ýƓdž ɣƘǂ Łĵŏơ

ƒĂùƬƓź ŁĵƦƒ Łĵŏǂƒ ƶ!ƒ Łĵdžŏƒ Ăǂ ƆƇŏ Łǂŏ ƊƵŁĵŏƮ ƉƵ

.ƓĳƒơƊƧƭ Ă ɣƧơ!ƒ ĳƦŊĳ ƧƓdžɣƧơ!ƒ ĳƦŊĳ

ŁĵĂùŏƵĂ ù ƧǂƮĂ ƧǂƊŊĳŏƵ ƆƙŏǂĳŏơƒŎƼŁĵƓ Ŋĳĳ!

Ŏù ƦƒƲýŏƛƒ ƧƓź!ƒ ƘƒƦĂ ƖƧǂƒ ƇƓƤŰƒ Ĭ ƉƵƵù ŁĵƧƤŰƒ

Ɗdžǅ ǂŏơùư Ĭ !ƍɣƧơ!ƒ ĳƦŊĳŎƼĭ ƧƮ dž ŏƞ!ƒ Ƙ!Ăơ

.ƊƵƓƮĂ ŊƓƧ ǂ!ƓɦƲ

ƧùƮ ƇƓĳ ƥùƺ ýƓdž ƶ ùƬǂƒ .. ŁĵŏƮ ƉƵ ɣƧơ ŎƼ

.ƘƥĂƒ ǁ!ƦŎƼĭ ƧƮ dž ŏƞ!ƒ Ƙƒƥƥ! ŎƛơŏƒăĂƦ dž

ĳƦùŊĳ.ƧƮ dŽƼǂŏ ƇƓ !ƒ ýƒĂơŰƒ ƥƓƼŁĵdžƵǂƊƓǂƘĂ

ĭ ƧùƮ dž ɣƶùƬ!ƒ Ĭ ƉƵƓƙƒƧŏƘ Ɠĳ Łǂŏ ƊƵŎƦƒ ýƒĂơŰƒ

!..ƓĭŏƊĭ ƧƮ dž ŏƞ!ƒ Ĭ ƉƵƓdžĂ ...ƱƼ

.. ĳƧƥƮ ŎƼǂƮ Ƈ ƧɦƧƮ ƇƓĳ ƥƅƺ ýƓdž ɣŏƮ ƮĂ

ŁĵýĂƓơŏŁĵƓǂ ŰýƥùƞdžŎƼƬƦ dž !ƍ5ŏƧƱ!ƒ ŎƼĂ

.ŊƓƵĳƊƵ ƶ ŏŁƶ ƥĂŏ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

ﾅùǫĝĵĝŚǑ5ÜǮFĜP!ƒ ﾅǫĝĵĝŚǑ5Σ dŽ|| ďǮƒ Ĝĵ ɸ ĵ!: **üĵ5**

ǎƧDǑùLĵĵÜƧƧùʅ !ƒ ƒŖùǋĬ DŽ|| ŔŵƧ Lĵơ KĽĵĵÄ .Ĭ ĐĵǮ

!.|| ơŕT ǎƧDǍDÜ|| ƙĥ

! || dŽĴŽŵơ ǑĵǮk ƒŖDĵǋĵ: **Lĵĵ ﾅ5**

:ǊĵǮĵFĝK ﾅƧƥŖʅ ƒ DŽ

ÜĵŕhK dŽDŽǑLĵĵ KƒÄ!ƒ ﾅʅ ĜƧ ƧÔPk LĴDyǒŖʅ kýǋ

Lĵĵù ǒdŽǑù5ƒĵǋŕT ĜĵǫǑLĵĵL ƚƧĜǫǑŔƧʅ Dĭ |ĐŽÜ Ĭ ƙơ

!ÞýĜĵƒ

ýùPƥ Ĭ ùƙơ ÜƧĜĵĵ LĵdžDŽŽK ĜĵĜ Ǒư dŽL ﾅk DŽ

Ĭ DŽǋĵžLĵdŽDLĴDýǍĝDKĽ ﾅ ĜŽ ǑĽĵ ǒLĴDýhƥÄ ÜĵFĵƒ

..... Ǒ! ǎƧɳ ĜŽ ǑĽĵ ǒLĴDýhƥÄ ÜĵĵĵŵﾅŁ!Ĝ

Ĭ ù!ǫǍŽƥǒ ƥơƒÄ ĈǑT ǊĵŽǋĵďž ĭ Ŗƒ Ǒ5L ﾅǒ DŽ)

(!LĵĵdŽÜƒ

:ýĜƥ

Ĭ ù!ǫÜƧɳĵƒ Ǒ5ĜĵdŽKdĵk ǑŔƒ ﾅǒĝŽƒ ﾅǒƧʅ !ƒ Lĵ

KƒƧdŽùʅ dĵÄ "ĜĭhqLĵ Lĵùhƚ ƧùƱ!ƒ yƱĜk Ĭ DŽĜĵĵÄdž

ﾅùʅ Ƨĵƒ ĜĭnĵDžǒDŽƥ!ƒÄ .ƧƱP Ǒ5KơŋĵDƥÜǎƧPÜƒ

Lĵ.ĜĵĜĭT ĜĵDŽƥdŽǍDÜĵĵÄdž Lʅ ơkǍDÜĵĵ Ƨĵơk Ǒ‡!

ƒÅùzƼƨǒ LḎ|| ǴLŅĳǴƒÅŗ ỳǒƦ ǒǕÅ ǕǴǷǷŽƨ‡ƨdžǴƒ

!Dƴ̢ÅƨƧ

.. ƥdž kLḎ‡ǒƨ !ƒ K'ƵǴƦ ƒ || !Ʀỳdž

.ƨǴƒƦǴÅƥ!ƒ Ĭ ƉŽK'ƥƨ

|| ǴùTƒ ăƨùŋ5ỲŽǒù! ||ƥÅŗ LḎdžǴdž ǴǷŽDŗNÅ

.ł ǒÅƥdžƒ ýǴǴƒÅ Ǒ‡LÅ !Ǵù

.ł‡ƨzdžƯ ƨDĬ ƉŽŽùkƥÅ NǶƉŽǴǴÅƥ!ƒ ƥƨƒÅ

Lùdžỳł‡ DŗǴ‡ ǕǴǷ5 LÅzłǒ DŗƒÅdž !ǥǴÅŗ ƥƨÅ

!ƨPƮ !ƒ

łǴǴkdž Ĭ !ÅǕƒ łǒƨ !ƒ Ĭ ƉŽ5 DǴǕǑƮ Ǵơǥ Ƶ ƵǴ kÅ

:ƥǴƒ K'!ǒ ǴǴŽ ǕǴǴ‡ Lùž

ł‡ƨzdž.."ǴǴL"ƥƯ łǒDŽǕƒ ł‡ƨzdž Ǒ5ăƨŋ ƒǴdž

ỳǴǴ|kĬ ùƉŽ2 ÅùT‡dž ỳƥÅdž Ĭ !ǥ|| ǴNĳǴǴ5ǴNƦǑƒ

ŀǴǴǴLǥĬ ƉŽƥǴLǑ‡! Ǖ ƨǑƒ

:NǴƮ DǒÅ NǴDLùdžƒÅŀƒ ơBǥÅNÅ ƥǴƒ Ǒ! ýǴ

łzùƮ Ǵƒ łǒ‡!ƒ K'Lǥ ƥ! ..!.."ǴǴL"ł‡ƨzdžK'DŽƥ!

łùŋÅdžÅŗ!Ǵł zǒǴǴƒǴ ýUÅ Ǖ5 lǴdžǴǴǷŽDŗk

ƒƥùƶ Ɗŋ̂ĵdžƠƪ Ĭ ƙơ ÜĂƥƶ!ƒ ƨƓĴƘơƙ LĵơƥƺƙdžǗŋĂdžƥƶƕ

.ƨďǂƥ

ƝƉƓŭƕƣ ƶ ù Ʈ LĴƇƗƶùƪ Ɠƙƒ ƚùƕďǂ!ƒ ƥƑƥƶ Ƭƙǂƒ Ă

.ƚǂƨƶdžƯ ƨƊĬ ƊƶžĵĂƠƪ ƥƿÜĵƥĂLŋĂ

! ƚƵƓdžǎ ƥƶƕ. ƚƵƓdžǎ ƊŊƥdǎĂŊĵ

!.. ƒĂơƥƺƙ.. ƒĂơƥƺƙ

LĵơƥƑƊƺƦƚƊǏ ƱƶǎĂ ÜƊǎŋǌƒ ƶ ƿĂǒ LƇƊƓŊƥƶƕ ƨƱƣ ƒĂ

.ƊŋĵƒĂdžLĵdžĂƕơƪ LǒLƇŊƒĂƿLĵdž

!..ƶƑƥƚ ƥơ Ɠdž ƊƶžƼ ƊǎƓĵơǂ ƥƑƥĬ ƣ dǎ

Lĵdž. ƚLƮ ơdžƨdžƺƪ dž ƊƶƊǎŋŊĵƠŋLǒLƇLǂdžǐýŊĵ

Ƥ..ƘƓƥƨǒ

ǗơƥƺƙdžĬ !ĂǕƒ Ɠƥƨƪ ƴƣ Ă Ĭ !ǫƥƨƬ ƥƿǑƊƶ LĵƥĂ

Lĵ̂ƕhƓŋĵƥdžǑù5ƓƥƶùƣĂĂ ÜƓŋƶdžƘƕŊƦǑƙƒ ƚǒƨƪ !ƒ

Ĭ ù!ǫƶ ùƊƶ LĵdžƘƒƥƥdžýĂƮ ĂƴƚƙǑǂ! ÝƘƒƨdžƺƪ dž

."ƓƥƚĴ

ƤƓĵ ǎ ƨŋ ƒƦƓdž

ƘùǥĂƙLƇƥùƶƕƓŋƥǫƓƥƶĂƥƶ!ƒ ƘƒĂƿýĂơƙƶ Ăƪ

. ƚǒƊƵǕƒ ƚǂƨƶdžƶ

:ƚ ƞǰ Ŏ5 Ɠǰǿǂ ƥƑK'!ƫ Ă

ƥƓǰƃdžǰdžơƥƙdžƚőƻ !ƒ ǀƦNjK'ǫƭ ýNj

:ƖƻƭơǶýƍĂ ƝƞƋ ýƞSƒ ƸNj

!…Ǚ

:ĭ Sǒƻ Ĭ ƉǮƫƝƐƓDNƋƇǰĂ K'ƥŽ

ýƨùƖǰ Ɠǐnǂ Ʃǩ LƆƤƨƙ ýNjƥ..ƒƦƓdžƥ..Ɠǰƭ ƙ DŽǙ

ƥ..ƒƝƃƒĂ ƒƝƃƒĂ ƓƃĂƖǰ ƥǒĂ NƒĂƥýǂhǕĂƥž!ƒ ƓƃǮŽ

:Σ ǣŎ5ƥƑƒ ýƍ

ĭ Ɋƒ ǕŎƖǰƒ ǤĂDƒǮƭ ƓǰhK'DƫǩƒƤ! .. yƖƭ DƒƦƓdž

Ǚ Ŏù! ƒĂƓ|5ÝƓǰƭ DŎǂ! SdžƒDǰƙžƳ DƍǕƓǰǿǂ Nǂƙ

ƓǰƉƝŎƙƒ ǂƩ zdž LǕ ǗyƒƭƏ!ƒ ǤĂDžƓK'DǕƓǰ||! LƒƬ

!..yƒƏ!ƒ ǤĂDǮzƓŎNĂǕzƭ Ɠƒ ƚǿǂ!ƒ ƚLĂƓdžŎ5

:ƥƑƓƙ ơƬ

ƥ..yƒƏ!ƒ ǤĂDƓýƬ ƙDƺƦƓdžĂ

:NƋƐD ƨdžΣ ǣƒĂ ƥƑƒ ýƍ

||ǒǮĂ ǕŎƖǰƒ ǤĂDžƓK'DŎ! ƒĂƍĂ.. DǰƭK'DƫǩƒƤ

.|| SƍƒĂDNǰdž |ƉŽLƆ

!..Ŏƭ hǚdž ƥƙDK'ƨƥƓǰĂ

:ŒƙŷǉŏǂƗ ǉŗƏǀ ýĂǉƉƊŒƙĂ

ƒĂƥù|ƼĂ Σ ƓĹƚƒ ČŬƌù ǊLǰùƝ ƥ! ..|| ƓǊǰĬ !ƍƓǰƈƓǊ

!...Ɗƙǉ̇ƒĂƮ

ƊžĂǊǰĂ Ǚýƥɲƌƶ ŎƼƮƦ džƮ ƓǉƒƥƶƷ ýƓƌǂ ƧƥǭƐ ƒǂǊ

ǚƥĂùLƞ!ƒĂ ƱƓƌƍ !ƒ LƞƌžǊǰǚ dž Ĭ ƊžƵƓĂƤ ǚƥƶƌ ǙƓƮƊžƛƓƕ

ǊƖƍƼ LǰĂù‡ŏ Üƥ̇ĂǊƌƒ KƒĂ|!ƒ LƞƌžƓ ơ Ĭ !ƍƒĂƭ ƧƶƕLƊ

.ƊǊƓƼĂ Ɗƙǉ̇ƍƊ

ƥùƶɧƚ ƥùơ ƓƌǊƒƧǂƦƌŽƼƧƮ ƓǉƒƥƶƷ ýƓƌǂ ǎĂƧŏĂ

:ýĂ|ƍƼ|| !Ʀ

LƊǙƓĹƙǉŏǂ ǂƮ ƓƐ ƨǂƧƌƙƊƤƵLǰơ ǊƦžƓƶýĂƊLǰƐ

Ĭ ùƊƶƵ ƧùƵƊLƊýĂƓƊǓ !ĂǙƒ ǂŏƮ !ƓƙKƊƮƛƼKƵƧƮ Ɗ

.ƓƕǰĂƌƶǉƟƒ ǊǰĂ

!...ƓǉƓƤ |ƧĂƮ kƓƌƵƱƤƊƓǉƓ LǰƐĂ

LǰƌžƍǓ LǰƐĂ ÜKƓǉ ǂ ǚλLƞƌžƓƮ ƓŏĂƥƶ!ƒ LǰƐ

LǰƌžƓǊƓƍýŏƦ LŎǂ! ÝýŏƮ ƓƙƒƧƤƈŎǊǂƮ ĂƧƥƌžƱƤ

ǂùLǰƶƌžLƞƌŽƌƉ ŎƼƥǓ LǰƐĂ ÜǊƼKǂƧkĬ Ʀƒ ýƭ Ăƒ ƒƦǊ

.ǂŏƶƼƥƌž

Üyù hfa!ƒ ÇfÃù ĐƒŽù ʅ Ĝ2 ƨ‡Ƨdž !ǥƗhŏ‡!ƒ ƥƑǴ Ɣ NǰǨÃ

Ǚ ƗƱP || ĜǰǰǰL‡ǩ Đǯƞǥ Üŏʅ !ƒ Ɣ oʅ Ĭ ĐŽƗ|ǯÃdž Ɣ ĐŽŏ

NǰĐǰ2 ƧƵĐK'Lǰ Ĭ Đyǆǯ .ŎNǰƗ ŏơ ĜǰǰʅhƔ ĐŽk ÜĜǰƵLj

Lǰdžù ǯdž ĜǰLNǰǰL‡ŏĐŽŽ ǚƱǗƒ Ĭ ĐŽƗƱP || ĜǰǰKʅ ǒ

ĜLĐǰĜǰ ĂʅP ÜǰŏŽƒ Ŏ5 Çǰǰ ýhǰÜÇfÃĐŽʅ Ĝ2 LƒǰʅƒƑ

.ƗǒƵǯdž LǰdžLǰǯdž ʅ ǰĐĜǰǰ ǯ Ɣ ĐŽǰ Ĝǰ

.. ƧnǰJ!ƒ ǰƵhǰǰfÃƒ ƗƵĜ!ƒ Ŏ5Ã

!..ƗŏʅJ !ƒ Ɣ oʅ Ĭ ĐŽǰǰƥĐƗʅ Ĝ2!ƒ K'|ǯÃ

LǰdžƱǰǵ ĜǰǵǰLƒŎ5Ɨŏʅ !ƒ ydžǯÃƗŏ LĐǰǰǗ LĜÃ

Ʊŏdž Ãǰ!ƒ ygÃdž !ǥLƒƧǰƒ NǰǰÃk yŏƱǰ ŏŎƗ! ÝƗǒƵǯdž

ÜƱǰǵu !ƒ ƒǰù NǰýĜǰǰLǰdžǰǗ LĜÃ .lƧʅ Ĝdž Ɨŏʅ !Ĝǰ

NǰƵdžK'ù hNǰǰÃ Üùƶǰdž ƧĜǰ Ŏ5ƗǒƵǯdž ƱǰǵK'ǰPĽÃ

K'ǰ ĽÃ ƒǰƧdžǰǰǰ ǰ ǰƒ ǯŏƱ!ƒ 2 ƧƵĐK'Lǰ ǰ5 ÝŎʅ ǯǰǰ

!..NǰǰŽ

ǰfÃ Ɣ Nǰŏ LĐLǰdžǰǰÜǰdžƔ NǰĐLĐƧŏǰ!ƒ LǰdžǰĜÃ

ýùǰŽǰhŎʅ ǯLK'ǰÃÃ ÜǰĜdžǯ ǯŏƱ!ƒ 2 Ƨƶŏ Ǘ ǰ Ƨǒ

ǰdžK'Ƨɳ LĐǰhǰǰǰƐ LǰƒlƧʅ Ĝdž Ɨŏʅ !ƒ ǰÃLǰ Lǰǰ

!..ýǰǰŽƵĜ LǰʅƵÃ yǰĐLǰdžǯĐ

***

2 ƧƵ ƒþ ƇƥƒĂLŋĂ ƇƠƊƇƶ Lƌƶƥơƒ Ă Lǂő ƊĂǆ .Ơƴ ƒĂ ýǂTƕ

.ǂőƒĂƙdžǑ.Ƈ Ʃ dƵ! ƊĂǆƒ

ǂƊǑǅ|| ƊǑ5 Ƈƥ ƨƥT ĭ Ƙƒ ƨdǅƒ LƊKƮ ƮơƊƒǂNĂ

:ǑƊǑƇǂǅ ƨdǅƒ LƥĂ Üdƶ!ƒ ƇƙƥƇ NƦƥT ƊƨdǅýƵƊĂNj

ƔNƥùƙĂ ÜǂƮ Ƈƙƒ ǂƕǂƊǅƥĂdƵƮ ƥƇ!ƒ ǂƕǂ!ƒ || ƨƘ"

!"ǂơƒƨƊǑNj

ƥùƶƕù ǂŋƇ!ƒ ƥƊǑ5ǅƵ5ƇƥƒĂLŋĂ ƇƠƊƇƶ Lƥ ƥ!

ǂùŋƇ Ǒ5ƒĂLƥ .ǂơƒƨ!ƒ Ĭ !ƍù ƇƝĂTƇƵ ǑƘƒ Ƶ ĂƨU!ƒ ýǂ

ÞƊǅƨƒĂùŋ Lǂùƫ ƙĂ ÜƊǅĂù ǑƵ ƇƥƨU dƵƙ KƇƵƇ Ĭ !ƍ

!ƊǅĂƨ ƽĂ5ýƕƇƒ KƒƨƇƥĂ Üƒ Ƈ ƨ!ƒ ƨǒƊýǑ|LĂ

ƨǂùƫ ƶdƵƇƇƕĂNjƇƙơƒƨ! ƒ ƮƤ Ĭ Ƙƒ LƥdƵ LƥĂ

ƇnƥǑƙ Ǒù Ƙƒ "ƊǑƇƮ Ƙ"jlƨdƵ dƵƒĂŋƕüƨĂŋnjǑLƇǒƨƕ

.ƇƙƒĂþ

ƨƫ ƶdƵ ýǚƱƊĬ !ƍƔǒ!ƒ lƨƇ ƕýƤƥƊƇĂ KƮ ƮơĂ

.ƇƥĂ ǑLƶ! ƒƕƒǂNjĂƊÜƇdƦT þýƤƥƊǑLƒÜƊǅ!ƒ

!Ĭ ǅƥƵƒƨƕ ƇƒƨĂ ƴƕLƵ Ăƫ ƒƦǑƤƊ

LƊƊǅdƵ ÜƘƒĂLǚƕĂ Üƨ ƫ ǚƕƨƫ ƶdƵ Ĭ LƥƵƥ ƥ!

!..ƒƦƥƕ || ƇƝj

.2 Ƨʓ!ƒ ǎ ƥơǫŎ5ŎƙƙdŽK'TƧ5Ă
Lǰùdž[illegible]ƵǾǀƙ Ǥǯžƒ DǍƞLǺŬ Ƨnǰ Ĭ DžŽK'ǒƥ[illegible]Ă
!..ŎƿĂ52 ʃʈ Ǔ ƚ ǒơ
!..ŽŏĂƱ [illegible]DžǤǯžƒ DǍƞLǰŏƵǤdžƒ Lǂ!Ă
.. Ʊ[5ƭ ƑǤƥ Ʃ dǮ ƥƶɥ
Ŏ! Dƥŏ ù Ǥǰ ƔǤǕ Ŏƙƒ ù ŎLƙƥƧ ƥĂLŋ!ƒ ƥơDƴPƥ
Ǘƚǒǂ!ƒ ǤƧʈ ǎ ƥơƚɥ ƶɥLƪDǤǰƔDǮǗʈ ǤƧ!ƒ LǰdžƧǤǫ
!...'ƥĂʃʈ 'DŎ5ƚƕǤǂƚƧƶdŽ5ƥƵǤkŎǂ!
ƚǒùʈ ƔDǮǗǒǤ lƧǤǫĬ DžŽƟǤʃ !ƒ Ŏ5K'Uǀǒʈ ƒĂ
yùdžǗLƒƥǒĂʈ K'ƨƵ" ƥǅ ƚƶʈ Ǥƒ ƚǒǂ!ƒ LǍǤkŎǂ! ǗǒǤ
LƪǕǫǗLǰƙĂùDžǰ Lǰǒʈ !ǤK'ƶĂ ǗƧǰǍǗƒ K'ƶƱDŎLƪ
!...ƥĂƥơ NǰLǂŏDŽƱPʈ
ƚùʈ Ƨ!ƒ Ǥǰ ƆʈǰkĂ Ǘƚǒǂ!ƒ ƆǒƧʈ k LƪDƥǒƧDK'Lǂ ƥ!
ǗǤǍƾùʈ DžǰĂ ǤǍƑǤP Ɣʈ okĂ ǗǤǰ ƽLǰDžǰLǰ ƥƶkŎǂ!
ŽƥùɥLǂ!Ă.ƚǂƧƶdžĬ !ǫƚŋǤ ǤǍƵƥk ǤǅƵ lƨNǤ LǍǂƙ
.lƥơƒĂ ƥɥlƥơƒĂ ǤǰǰƔơʈ kǤƧʈ !ƒ ŎNǰǤNǰǗ !ƙLǰdž
!..ƚ ƛǤƚǒƧʈ ǤǰǍƕDŽǤǅ lǰƒdŽƱPǸ ƩDƵ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

.. Ɨǂ Ƨzdž Ư ƧDDǓǆŬ!ƒ ƥƓ ƒƗǂNǍ

ýƒƨ Ǵ dž ýǴ ķ!ƒĂ Ůƒ ƧĂƒ Lȷdž ƽƙƙ K'!ƒƨǴdž K'ƒƥ ƞLȷƒĂ

.ƒȒdž ķ dž

ýPƒƥ DȠȷĂ ŮƧdž ķ dž ƧƒĂ ƪ DýPƒƥ LĂƕƧǴ dž ƠƮ ƮĂ

!..lƥǒƮ dž

ƧƒĂù ƪ Dýù Pƒƥ . ƥù oƒĂ ƥù zhƒȒȷ oƒĂ LĂ Ư ƥǴ ķ ǒ ƒĂ ƫ ƥ ǻ

.Ɨǂ Ƨzdž

ɤ ȵ!ƒ Lǂķ DǓǓ Ɨǂ Ƨzdž ƧƒĂ ƪ DýPƒƥ Ɨdž Ǖƒ lƗNǰLǂ!Ă

. lƨ Ƹ Ĭ !ǥ ǴķǂƗ Lȷdž ʎǴ Ɨ ƥƪ K'ǒzƥ NƥǇLȷdž Ⱪƒ

.K'ƥĂƒ Σ ǲLǑ ƼlƧƒƧdž ƥƮĂ lƧĂǑP ƥƮ Dɤ ȵ!ƒ LǴ

K'ƒĂù |h ǴƥLǰƥ ṙ Nǂ Ƨzdž Ǒ Ƽ Ĭ |!Dƥ DǴƒ ƥƏƒ LǴ

!Ǵǰ ǲLlƨ Ƹ Ɨ Lƥdž Ƨ oķ K'LǴ ǑRƒ Ŭ ʎǴƒ Ɨ hǒǂ!ƒ

Ůýù ǒƥ Ž ýù hƥ Ɨǂ Ƨzdž ŽƧƨ ķ LDƧǒ ǒ DǴƒ ƥƏƒ LǴĂ

Ʊ hù ŋ ǰ LDýhƥ Ɨ Lƥdž ýĂ ơ Ɨƪ ƒƧo!ƒ yƥĂ dž !ǥ Ɨ hǒǂ!ƒ ƥĂzķĂ

.DǓǓ!ƒ

!..lƒĂNǰ ƉŽƧƪ ķ DƗ Ɨǂ Ƨzdž Lǂ!Ă

.... lƧƺ hdž ʎǴƒ Ɨ hǒǂ!ƒĂ ýǒƒ ŽǴ ǰĂ

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

LǤǴǂ ï ƦǶ DǍǒǶ ƧƮ Ƶ ÜƻǍɳɲǰǇƻ ƧǂƮ ƶdǇ DǤǴƵKʿƺǍǍ

.ýǨǨ!ƒ NǤƼ |ǒLƮDɣɳǒ

.. ǑƮ ƬƵ DǒǮk ƧƱǰǍƤ!ƒǍ KʿƺǍ

.yǒƱƛǰ || ƧǍǒǍǒLǰLǰdǮǫǰǍǗƒ ǤǰɲǰǰǨkǎ ƧƤDǂLǰǊ

!Ƥ..ǊLǤƱƮ ǂƚǝ DǮ.ǂǫǫơ ɣ Ƨơ ǑǊD

ɸɲƮLǇ ɸǍƶLǰƵ Ǎƫ ..ǂ ɸơǒƵ Ǎƫ ï ƦǶ ǑƼ|| ƮDǗ ǑLǥ

..ýƕLǰdǰǨɲƮ ï ƦDǮƛƧǍƮ

!.DǮǭ DǮǰƵǒLǰ ǍɸƵ!ƒ LǂǍ..ǤǮǭ ǤǨƤǂLǰ Ƶ Ǎƫ

ǂùƮ ƧƼǤɲǰǰƱƶǒǍ ǗNǰkǰǍɸɸTơǒǍ NǂǰǍdƵǮǰǒƵ Ǎƫ

Ƶ ùɸǍ ƧƒƧɸǤǰdǯɣ Ƨư ǒǍ ǗǤǴǒǂ ǒơ ǤǰǤư ǒDǮǗǒǮƦǫ Ʀ

!..|| ƧǍǒǍǒLǰLǰdǮɸǤ !ƒ ýǨǨ!ƒ

.. ǂƮ dǰƤ!ƒ LǰdǰƳ ƧƦkǂƵǤǤ!ƒ KʿƮɸǍ

ǗǂùơǍǨdǰǂ ùƼǗƒ KʿǤNǰkǰ ǑƼyǰǮƒ ƩǒƮ D KʿƮɸǍ

DǮǗ ƦƦǮǤǰǮǰ ǤǰƧƵƬǍ ÜyǤǰdǰ Ï !ǥyǰǮƦDLǰDɸǒƧDǑLǰǂǍ

..ǂƮ dǰƤ!ƒ DǤǴǮ !ǥǂƵǤǤ!ƒ ɣ Ƨ|Ƶ ýƮ ǒLǰơ ǗKʿdǰ !ƒ

.. ǂƮ dǰƤ!ƒ Ï !ǥǂƵǤǤ!ƒ ɣ Ƨ|Ƶ ýƮ ǍǍ

.. ǤǰǮǒǰ ƬơǮƮɸǍ

.ǂLǰɲǰ KʿƮɸǰ!

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

الفصل الثاني عشر

.. ƧĂɳɱǰǇž ƨǑɳǮǧƧǂƪ ƶdžǶǗƱƊǏ ƊƶŽ

ýǴƗdžǂ ƻ ƿĂ ǗƊǅǨǑǈǰlƧdžǂƪ džǇǰdžƔ Ƨ|!ǴǇǰǑƪ ƊƩǓ5

.ǊǰƊ Ǒ5ƊǆǒǓkƧǗƒĂƤ!ƒĂ ǗƧƪ ǴǰƥƶǑ

ƚƵƧùƪ džǗǨùư džǰƿǏ !ĂǗƒ LǰǑƪ ƊǅƔ Ƨơ ƊǴǨLǴ

ƔǑƪ Ɗ ǨƒǗƧƪ Ǵǰ ƥƶǑ ýǴdžǂ LǴĂ .ƚ ƒƥǗǴƚƑǑƊǇƧǑdž

ǊǴƧ Ǐ !ǵƥǴ ǗǑ5ƪǨ džǂ ǊǂƧk ƊƸžĂ ǗǰƥƪƩǑ5ƫǴ Ƨɦ

Ʃ ùǇǰǑù5.ƔǑƸ!ƒ ƥƪ džǂƒǨǊǰǑƪ Ă ƻ |ǒLǴ .ƔƧơ!ƒ Ǒ5

.ƚǑǴƒ ƚLǰƒ ǨǰǨǴǨƪƥǗǑǨƒ KǴǑǰƶŽ

ƚùǒĂɳǰƒ KƒĂù|!ƒ LƊƻ ƧƶǒƧƪ Ǵǰ ƥƶǑ ýǴdžǂ LǴĂ

ƊǨǴɳǨ ǗƚLǰƒ ǨǰǨýƥƚƊǇŽKǴǴ!ƒ ƚƪ Ƨ5ƨɳǨǰƻ Ăƪ

LǰǗùǨĂ ǴǰƒĂdžƨƨǨĂ ǗǒǴǰLǰdžǂ Ƨƪ džǂ ƫ ǒɳ!ƒ ƴǰĂdž

.ǎƧƤƊƚǒǴǰLǰdžǰǰƥǒdžǗĂƱƤ

:ǊǰǰýƪǒǴĂ Ƨƪ Ǵǰ ƥƶǑ ýǴdžǂ LǴĂ

.. ƊǅƪƒǨƥɦ!

.ǑɳǨǑƪ ƻ Ǵǂ ƻ ƧƶǒǗ ƥơƊǂ!

***

.. ǀĂŶĂ

Ĭ ù DžŽ DžŽ K'ƒƨFG ɫ ŭ λ K'ƨnlj LƒDLƒdž ƨƒDŬĂ

Ŭyŏp ŽƳƨƒ

.. ɫ ƥo ĭ Ʀƒ Ĭ LzjdžƁĂ5K'ǂƨƥDĂ

ƥù zhŎLǧ DƧŽŎNjƓĂ .ĂƥzƗƒ K'ƒƨFG Lƒdž ŭ λ ljƦNj

ƓƗkDžkoƒ ŬƓƒƨFG LƒdžLƒƦƒ Ĭ DžŽƯ |LƙŬyƇƗƒ Ƶ pĂ ƥzĂdž

.ƨnlj!ƒ ƥzhɫƮ džƤ!ƒ ydžƓƗĂƠP Ĭ !ǥƇƙƓzĂ ɫ Lƒnƒ

!..LĂnjdžƓ ƠPƮ ƮK'ƮƥĂ

Ĭ ù!ǥýƮ ŏƵ ĂƮ ĭ ƨŏƦokĂ ŎPƒƨƮ LƮƨĂƮ ƦDŎLǂĂ

.ƨƠP!ƓLƒƨzƮkŬ LƒƦƒŽƓƨFG

K'ƮƥùhɫzƨùƮ !ƒ LƚƔYƨƠP!ƓƒĂƮ oDƓƨƓ LƮĂƥhĂ

Ĭ !ǥK'ŭƼŰƒĂ ŬLƒƨĂƥDŽƨĂƓƒNDĭ DžŽNƗƒƼƓƒƥĂ Ŭƥk

.. ƨohƥ ljƓƙƒ

!..ɫDƓĂ K'LƓ ǀĂŶƓdž Lǂ!Ă

ƨùƮ z!ƒ Ƈƥuư Ŏù5ƇƓŽƒ Ŏ5ɫhoƓ ƨƓƒ K'ƥzĂ

.ƨNƓƥ

.ƭ Ɠ ƦƒŊĂƥ K'zƥŽĂ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

DǦǻǑDǦǻǫǬžǨǨƵ dǻǦǬž Ǖǻǻǻŋ!ƒ ƚ Lǻǻŋ!ƒ DǦǻǑDǦǻǫǬŽǨƵ dž

…Ǐ !ǍǕƒ ƚ Lǻǻŋ!ƒ

!……ǻǻŢ ǦǻǬžǦdžǦǻǂ

ǦdžǂǕǨ!ǂǑǨƒ ǻǍǻǻ!ƒ Ǧdžǂ ǕǨ!Ǧ ǑǨƒ ǦǦǻǻƒ Ǧdžǂ

ýùǒǍǮ!ƒ ƨǻǻǻ !ƒ Ǧdžǂ ǕǦǦùǻ ǑƼǨǒǮǬǑǨƒ ǻƒǍƨǕƒ

Ǧǻǻǂ ..ƨǦǻǻǍ ýǻǻƒǬǑƼ || ƨǦdž ýƒǍǊDǦdžǂ ǕƻdžǻdǬž

!…ǂKDǬǻǬǂ

ǂǦǂ ǂǍǕǊƼƨǻǂǻơ ǊƩ ǒ ǐ ǻƒ ƨǦǻǕƒ Ǐ !ǻǦǻǻ

ǕǑùǻǻǂǻƻ ƨǻǒǍ ǕǻǒǂǻƻƼ ƨǻǒǕǻơ ǊǻƼ ƨǻǒǍǻǻ!ƒ

ǊǻǻǂǂǍǻƚǒǦǻǍ ǕǒǦǻǍ ƚǻǻ!ǻǂǻǻǻ ǒƻ ǂ ƻ ƨǻǒǍ

!…ǦǻǬžǍǻ..

ù ýǦơ ƚùǒǏ ǬǬù ǂƨdǬ ǻǂǻǻǻ!ƒ ǑƼǂǦǻ!Ǎ

……………ǂƨƒƨdǦǻùhƨǍǻùùT ..ǻùùǻŋ ƨǍǻùùT

ǦǦǻ ŋDǑƼƚǻǦ ýǂhǕǂǻǻŋ!ƒ ǂǻǻdžǂƨƼǑƼǦǻǦ ǻ!

Ǎ ǕƔƨơ!ƒ ǑƼǑƵdžǻǂDǂ!ǻydǬǕYǍƨǻƒ ǂdžǒƨǦ!ƒ

ǻǻƨǨǨǂǦ ǑǨƒ ǨǦdžƒ ǨǍǻ Ǐ ǬǬǂƨdž ǊǒŋƵ ǍǬǬǬ

ǂƨùdǻ ǦǏ !ƒ ǨǦǦ Ǐ ǻơ ǕǑ Ǧ !ƒ Ɣ ƨơ!ƒ ǂƸ ǕǦǻǦǦ ǑƼ

.|| ƨǍǒǍǂǑƼǂdžƒ Ʃ ǬǬǂƸǦ ýǦ!ƒ ǨǻǍƼýǂǑǦ

Þ..ǤǆǯǍƒƦƌǆǉǰǫ

Þ..KƠǝơư ƦƒƖƦNjýǂ KLǥǆ Dǆ

Þ..2 ƓǗdǰ ǤǰǑnǰǤǰLǰDǐ !ǫ

Þ..ƔƧǝƖǰ ýNj

Þ...LǰǝƖǰ ýNj

Ǒù|! ǐ Ƥù!ƒ ƧǤǝǑǓƒ Ƨǒƪ dǮ ǖLǰǝǰǆǅ ǤǝǰƵǮƔǂ DǮ

ýùƦǀǗÝǂùLǰǹƒ Lǰ dǆƶƩǤ ƻ ƪ Lǰǆ ùǕLǰ DǝǆNjǰƧƪ dž

LǰǓǍù!ƒ Lǰƶ ǤǹǰƼ ýǰǥLǰǝƪ ƧƼLǰǍ Ǚ ƦǍƺ ǭǑǩǮ ǤǰǝǅǄ

Þ..lǝǝ!ƒǍ ƻ ƧT!ƒǍ

.. NǰǯƦNjǐ DǆǮƔǒƞǒLǰDƴǑƦƪ ǒLǰdǰǉ ǤǰLǂǒDž

LǰǤơƨƨǒÜKǍǂdǰ Uǩ!ƒǍ Üdǝǂdǰ lƨƒƨdǰ KLǥǍ

ǐ Dǐ ùDǆǮǤNǰǍƞ ƥǝƻǒLǰdǰǂ! ǂƪ !Ǥ ǂǝǫÜǤǰǤ Ǐ DǆǮ

!..ýƒǑƪ

ƻǂùƪ ƶdǰ Ư Ǥ|ǝLǰdǑǤǰdǑƼ ýDǰǝƨƶTǝKǝǰǍ

ýƒƨùLǰǤdǝǰ ǐ ƦƒǍ ÜǰǍLǰǕǍ NJƻ ƪ Ǖǐ Ʀƒ ÜƦǍƞǹǰ

!..NǰƼƧUƦǰ

ǑǈƻùƪǝǒDǰýDǰǰƦǹƨǍƶT!ƒ LǰDǁT Lǰǝǆ

!.ǐ ƥơǍ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

ƥù ƑƋź ƋƉ lƧƲ LýĂDƓƥƉŽK ƍ!DLƥơ lƧNƋƒ ŎLƚ ηƩĂ

Ǒù5ɣƧƓıơŏ ƥDŽdƐ Ƌź lƧNƋƒ LǂkDžýƘ!ƒ LƒƥŏdŽLƥdž

LƮK ƥĂùzk Ɠıdǂ ƓƥƩČŐT ýǂ Lƥ .KĂdŽĂDƓơ ƚǂƧzdž

.LƥơǗƒ Ư zhŎƩΣ ƓLƒ LƥdŽƺŏ ƥǂŏ ǗƑƋǊƥƋŽ Ǘƒ ƧD

lƓơ!Ɠùǂ η ƑƋǂ ƚdƐ Ɠ!ƒ ŎƩɣ ŏƺ Ư ƓƥƋƓK ƪ ơĂ

LƥdŽ ŏƧƲ!ƒ Ŏhɣ Ʋ k ǕŎ ǂƘƒ KƒƧƓ ă ƥơƺ Ɠŭǂƚ ƋƥƓ!ƒ

.Ŏ!ƨLƥdž !ƺƚƱơdƐ LƒƥŏdŽ

.. Ƈƨz!ƒ Ư zhKƪ ơDŎƘƥLƥdŽK'hƧkƒ LƥơĂ

Σ ơŏLƥdŽǗ ƥƋ!ƒ ɣzT!ƒ ƥƒƧƩDLƥƥǀ ƓƥLƮK'ƧzT ƥƩ

ƦƤŏLƮŎǂƘƒ ƺƑƋ Ư Ʃƨ ƥƩÝLƥŎ ƉƩŽƩNǂLƮ Lǰ ƦƓƲ

LƮƺùƱdƐ LĂùLƩǏ ƘThK!ĂƓĂ .ƒƑƋ!ƒ Nƥơ ǐ Ʀƒ ƧηǗƒ

!...ǕƘƓ!ƒ ɣŏƱ!ƒ NƮƱdŽƪ dŽýηƧ!ƒ Lǂ!Ă .NǂLƥD

LǰdŽƥùƑƋź ù ăƮĂ Ʋ ùơǗ Ɠǂù NƓƩ ŎƩK'Lǂ ƥ!

Þ..ɣĂǂƧ!ƒ ƧηDŎƓdŽ ƚơ ƇƋŏLƮNǀƨĂηŏýηƩǗýƘ!ƒ LƒƥŏdŽ

Þ...NƥƦƓdŽǂ!Ă ..NǂƉŽǂkDžƧƓ !ƒ Lƺ

!... ƚŏǕƓƚ!ƐdŽNƮƱdŽŎƩ

ƚùƉŽƲ!ƒ ƚTƥƓdŽ ƥzhǗK ŏƒ ɣƓLƥdžýƤƥDK'hƧkƒ

ýƓıơdĂ ƫ ƧĂƒ Ư zhŎƩ ýƓdŽƒ ƒƦĂ ǕŎ ǂƘƒ ƺƑƋ ydž

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

.. ǒǎƶ!ƒ DǍǎ ýǍDǑ5

. Ǒǩ ǴǵDǑ ǹǰǩ L̩DǒƕǗ LǴ

KƠǴǍǒ!ƒ ƚ|ǒƣ Ǐ !ǥǎ ǒNǰǑǨǰƴ ƌǅǴǵ !ƒ Ǒ5 KƕNǰǍ

lƧù ƌǅǑƦ Ǖ ýǍǒǍ ǕǑǨƌǅǅǍDǑǂ! KǒǰǏ !ǥǴǒƵ DǍǕ

!..ǴǰǍ :ƚǏǴ

.. ýǴ!ƒ ƚ ǹǰǒ lǰǴǩ Ǒ5ƧǴ!ƒ ý|Ʀ DDǍƶ

.DǴǂƚƶǹƧDƦǰǅNǂƧǩ ǒƥKLǂ Ǐ Ʀƒ LǒǑƌǅǏ !ǥǒǍƵD

.Nǰ5Ƨǩ ǒƥỚT || ǴǰL ǂǒ DǍ

. NǂƧǩ Ǵǂ ǴǴǍ LǴ

!..DǍ !ƒ Ơ Ǎ ƔƧơǍ..ƔƧơ!ƒ Ơ Ǎ DǍ

ǴLǒǴƤ KLǴ ǕƚƶǴ !ƒ ƔƧơ!ƒǍ ýǴ !ƒ DǍ !ƒ LǒǍ

.lƧǑƤ lƧǒ Ǒ5ƫ ǒǩ

!....ƧǍƞǹǰǅ Ƨƚ[ƶǅ ýǖƲ Ǐ !ǥKǒƵǍ

!...ǴǰǒkDǴƚƑüƙǅ DǍLǰ Ǐ !ǥKǒƵǍ

!...ǴǰƵ [Ǖ ǑǨƒ ǑƦƧ Ǒ5ƚDǎý ǂ

.ǑǒǍ5ƾ Nǰ!ƒ ǴǴƧƒ Ǒ5ǴǒǍDKǴǴ!ƒ Ǒơ ǒǍ

!..ǴǂǖƼDLǒǑǅǅơƕƟƦ TǍ

.. DǴǕƒ KƧǅǍ

Ŏù5ƧdžƵdž !ɡƓǵƵƥ ǕƧhǾƵǔ ĕ Ʃ ŏǾƵ!ƒ ƟƓǵ ŎƵĂ

ƓƠƤ DŽƵ[ƙ ƻ Ă[ƓƙƥǂƟ LŢDƓƵǷ|ƓǰĂ.KƒĂ!ƒ ƚ[Ɠƻ

."LǷƧhƥ KŏǰĂ"ƚŏTLǳƵƽƒƧƵ" LǷhŏƱP!ƒ ĂNǰǰƵƞ

.ƥƥƞ!ƒ ƱP!ƒ Ĭ !ɡŎƙǾƵ K|ƞǔĂ

.ăƧPDƥƵhǔƥƒĂ ƓǷƒĂdž !ɡýŢ ƙƓǷƧ[KŢƥĂ

"!..Ư ƵhƓƒƧĂ Ɠǰƴ ƵhǕKƊƞƓdžƓǰƐƞŏƧƥ!ƒ LǷ

***

Ý..'hŏ[dǷƵƧƥƳ"Ĭ ƺKƥƞ ƁƒDŽ

:ƵƒƓNƒƧƚƞdžƧƚŢ |!ƒ ƧŢ ƓƒƥƵ ýƓdžĭ ĂƧŏ

.ƓƥLǷD2 ƧƵDŎƚ! ŎĂơ Ldž|ƱLǳƵ ƻ Tƚƞ[ŢKŢƥǔ

"ƚŏũTLǳƵƽƒƧƵ" KLǷ .Ăƥƚƒ ƓǵƓdžƞɡƥƵ[ŢŎƚ! ŎƙƓĂ

LǷ .LǷƞǕ LǷĂǕLǷ[LǳƵƥƧLdžƽŏƴ ƙǕƧŏƺŢ ƚŏƥ

.ƒ PT ĎČČČ Ăƒ PT čĔČČLǷhƟĂƒƧŏýŏdž!ƒ ƒƒƥƙ

ĭ Ƙù!ƒ Ŏù[ǰƧ!ƒ ƽùŏƱ!ƒ Ĭ DŽƵŏTLǳƵƽƒƧƵ KLǷĂ

.ýŏDŽĬ ƙơ "ýƥdž" LǷƒƙdžĂ ǕƔĂLǷ!ƒ LƵ ýƓdž!ƒ ýŢ ƽŏ

!ƔLǵ ýƚ LǳƵƓǰƱŏƙĂƥƚƒ KƒƧdžƵ[dƙLǷĂ

yù|ƙKùLǷ ƓǰǰƵƓǵƒ LǳƵLǰƒ LǷƙdžĂƓǷƵƥƚǔ DŽ

......"KƓǵ" lƧdžƵ[dž

Ǒù5Ă Ü!ł ù dǗǎẓ"Ă "ł ù dǗŏƧ" KƒƧdžẞ{ džǗŋjĂLrj ǑŜĂ

ǴinʝǷǆǒƲ ƧD Ǒ5ÜKƒƧdžẞ{ dẑ LǇdǎ ƧPLK Ǵdǆdžǎǳ

!ǴǁǶǆǷǕǆǒ{ ǒĂ Ăǃz!ƒ

ýù'Pƒǃ yù|k Ü!ł ù dǆz!ƒ ă Ƨ|!ƒ Lǉdžƶ džǳ dǕǶĂơ K'Lǵ

Ǐ !ǵǆdžǂ ǴǙǊ ƒRNjLǶ .NǴǆ ǴǆǕ K'ư Ƨ5ǐ Rƒ ǂ ǴǙǊ

ǐ Rù!ƒ ǂ ǴǙǊ Ǐ ǄǕǴǕ# KƵƨĂ ǴǆǕĂ .ƒǇdžǕǴǕLǇùʎ

Ǵǆƒ ʢLJ K'ƧƧ‡5ÝK'ǃǆ ǃɲł dǆ!ƒ lǴ džǕ LJK'ǃɳĂ ÜNǆǆk

.ǃǆɳ Lǉdž

ǂ ƱǴLǉdž ù ǄǕƧǆk LJǴǕ# KƒĂǃ Ǐ ǄǕƲ Ƨ5ǃ!

!....ł!ƨƶLǉdž

yǶǃù kĂ ÜƧǆǃ ljRNjǑ5 ǂ ǒƧǑ!ƒ LƵ yǶǃk LJǴǆǕĂ

!..Ǵǆj ʢLJLƵ yƘǑ!Ǵy ǶǃkĂ ..ǴǆǴLǑ5łƶǃĂƒ ă Ƨ|!ƒ LƵ

.ǴǴɂǑ5ɣ ǃǒƱǴLǊ ǃĂ

ǐ ƧƒǃŰƒ ǄǴơ!ƒ Lǉdž ƧǴ T ǥK'ù ǃǆǕǴǴ K'ƒRĂ

: ǴǆǕýĂ|ŏ"Lǆɳ" K'ǒ!ùǐ Ƨ[dẑ

Ƨǥơk K'ǃù NƒĂǃ LJĂ ."ƨɳơdẑ ł!ǆP" ýƙơƒ Ăǃz!ƒ Lǥ

!...ǃǆɳ!ƒ ǴǆǃĂdžLJ ơkĂ .NǆǴǁ

ÜĿǅžĂùƱǨdž ĿǇ ùdžǅƥž ydžǸǇĬ ƨǇƥǗƒ ƉƏǻǶ!ƒ Ŏ! ýǵ

Ĭ !ǫĿƥǰƬ ƚɳǴ Ŏ5ƊƞǈǂĦ .ĿǇƥĂŋ ĿǍĂƊƵžŏĂ Ăƥž!ƒ ĿǍƬĂǴǰ

!…ĿƥɳĿǇ

.. ǤĂƊƦžƪ ǤŹ Ĭ !ǫýŏƬ Ǥǩƒ KǨžƕĂ

ƨdžǇ ă ƨŏ Ŏǂ! ÝǤǇǤǘ ƥơƊǸǇǅǇKƥĂƒ Ŏ5ǨƊƪžƊĂ

.ǁǤǇǂ!Ǵ!ƒ ĿǇž ƚơư ƒĂ ĿƨĂƬ hǤǇƥĂžŏĂ ÜǸǇǅǇǜ

ƥƨƱhǤǇǰǂ ƨdžǨyƕǇ!ƒ ǤĂƊƦžƪ Ǥǩ KĿǵ ƨŋǇ!ƒ ƥǇž

ǸǇǅžƨƊĬ ƦùƒƱǤǴư!ƒ ĿǵĂ ."ƨɳơdž ƔƨƤ" ĿǇžĂƥž!ƒ

.ƥǇž ǸǇdžǇǅž |ơ ƥǇÜKǤĂǅžž ƉžýĂƪ ơƊŽ

Ŏǩƒ ƚdžǇǇž Ĭ !ǫŎ|ǒƨƱ Ŏ5"ƚŏƬĿdžǇ ƾ ƒƨž" ĿǇžKɳƨƤ

.ǤǇǰKǅǂŽ

ĿǇžǜ ĿǇžƔƨ|ŏǤž ƬÜĿǤdž ĿǇž ǇǨŎƪ5ŎždžKĿǵ

ÜKŬǤdžž KùƪĂ ÜĿǇǨžƨǜ ùdžǇǨǤǇ Ŏždž KĿǵĂ .ǤǇǜǇ

.ƨƨǂǒǇ KǤǤǇž ĿǇžƥơƒĂĂ

.. ĿǇž!ƒ ydžǤǜ Ŏ5ŎĿǇɳĂ ă ƨƤƊ.ƨdžž

Ĭ ùƉžƊĂžŋɳƒ ƬǜùhǇĿƊýǴ ƚŏƊĬ ƉžǤǇŎƦ ƒ ǤǂĂ

.ƨŋǇ!ƒ ƥžƚžƕ!ƒ ƚƵǤ!ƒ Ŏ5"ƨɳơdž"

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

الفصل الثالث عشر

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

***

Lǿ[illegible]Ăù ƱƘdž [illegible] K'ǥǷĂk L[illegible] ýƓ́ ƚǒĎ Ĭ [illegible]

ƒĂ[illegible] ǒǑù ǂ! Ü[illegible] ǒƧơk L[illegible] ŰĂ Ü[illegible] Ɵǖ[illegible] !Ǵ[illegible] Ƨz!ƒ

L[illegible] ù Ţ ơk L[illegible] dž[illegible] ƒĂ[illegible] L[illegible] ù ƚ|ǒƧƱ ĭ [illegible] ƒ[illegible]

.N[illegible]ĂdžÏ

:Ǒ[illegible] ýĂ[illegible] K'L[illegible]

Ĭ ù!ǫ[illegible] ý.ýƓ́ ƚǒĎ Ĭ [illegible] ƒ[illegible] L[illegible]

[illegible] ù [illegible] Ă[illegible] !Ă . [illegible] dž L[illegible] ĭ Ƨǒ[illegible] Ɣ N[illegible] Ă[illegible] 5''ƨɳơdž''

Ĭ ù!ǫ[illegible] ù Ţ [illegible] Ă Ü[illegible] k [illegible] K'[illegible] Ư z[illegible]

LĴĭ zù[illegible] Ă Ǒù 5 L[illegible] ƒ[illegible] . ''ƨɳơdž'' [illegible] ƒĂ

. [illegible] L[illegible] Ǒ[illegible] Ü N[illegible] Ǒ5 [illegible] ƒĂƒ ƒ[illegible] D

Ǒ5Ĭ !ĂŰƒ ƚ[illegible] L[illegible] !R [illegible] K'[illegible] L[illegible] [illegible] ž

[illegible] ù ƿ Ƨù [illegible] Ŭƒ L[illegible] Ü[illegible] ù ɳơdž'' [illegible] ''[illegible]''

!.. [illegible] ƒ [illegible] L[illegible] ƒ Ǒơd[illegible] ƨ Ĭ !ǫK'Ƨ[illegible]

N[illegible] L[illegible] ƒ Ǒơd[illegible] ƨ h K'[illegible]

!.. ƚǒ[illegible] Ĭ !ǫ

K'ù [illegible] Ǒ[illegible] ÜƯ ƧŰƒ ƚz[illegible] ƨ [illegible] K'L[illegible]

ƨ ù Ţ [illegible] !ǫ[illegible] . K'ư dž[illegible] Ĭ !ǫ[illegible]

ýù ɳǒLJ ǅĂNjNĐ[illegible] LǅĜ[illegible]ɳĂ Üɛɳơdž' Ĭ !ǫƨ ǒƧƲ!ƒ

.Ƨɳ[illegible]Ž!ĂŰƒ ƱĂǒP!ƒ ydž[illegible] ÜĠ[illegible] !ƒ Ĭ !ǫDĂ[illegible]ƞ!ƒ

.. ČűP!ƒ Ŏ5[illegible]Ă

!…[illegible]Ă… L[illegible]ƒ Ŏơdž[illegible]ƨ

!…ă ƧPĐ[illegible]k.. [illegible]Ă5

L[illegible]u ƵĂ Ü[illegible] L[illegible]Ă Ü[illegible]ƶ!ƒ LƵ yƲ]L[illegible]Ű [illegible]Ă

! ….[illegible]ǒDƖƧN[illegible]ƒ

.. ƟĜ[illegible] !ƒ Ŏ5[illegible]Ƨƶdž[illegible]Ă

L[illegible]K'ŰĜ[illegible]!ƒ [illegible]Ž[illegible] ǒLǅÜĜ[illegible]ƨ Ĭ Đ[illegible]K'ơƧ[illegible]Ă

ýPƥĂ ÜĐ[illegible]ƒ [illegible] ƫ ǒĂ[illegible]!ƒ [illegible]Ŏ[illegible]ƒ ŎN[illegible]Ă Ü[illegible] [illegible]!ƒ [illegible]!ƒ

K'ĐƵ[illegible] [illegible]Ă .Ĝ[illegible]ƨ ƽ [illegible]ĂĂ…L[illegible]ǒ [illegible]Ă[illegible]!ƒ Ʊ[illegible] Ă Ĭ !ǫĜ[illegible]ʋ

…….ƟĜ[illegible]ƒ [illegible] ƒĂ[illegible]ǒLǅĐ[illegible]ɣ ĐŽÜ[illegible]ʋ

.. [illegible]ƒĂ[illegible]ƵĜ [illegible]Ă

Ŏù! [illegible] ƶ[illegible] "ƨɳơdž" ýP[illegible] ƟĜ[illegible]ƒ [illegible] ƫ ǒĂ[illegible]!ƒ L[illegible]

.ƨǒƶ[illegible]Ž[illegible]dž ɣ Đ[illegible]Ă .[illegible]ǒ[illegible]!ƒ ýPƥ N[illegible] ýĂ[illegible]ǒÜ[illegible]ʋ

.. ƒ[illegible] ƽƱĐĐž

."ƨɳơdž" Ĭ !ǫŎ[illegible] [illegible]K'Ƶ[illegible] ĐÜK'ŰĜ[illegible]!ƒ ă [illegible]ǫK'[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

ƥùƑƓǴƇǴǂ ÜǴǬǮǮƥƥƞ ƊǍǋƞǉǌƨƥǍǕƒ ƙƧƥƮ ƇǬơĂ

ǂƉƊǲǰƘƓǴĂdžǳdžƥƬơĂ ÜƊǍǋƞǉƒ ƥĂǀǑ ï ƦƒĂǋǉƝǰǌǆƥĂƊƒǮ

.ƘƒĂǀ!ƒ ƇǲdžǍ

:ǋǴǵƧƥdžƥƑƓ ƖƧdžǨƘƊǮ

Ǐ ù!ǫǴƖƙǬǂ Ƙù ƕǋƦƥ! ÜǂždžǮǑƞƊƇƊƇǍƥƨƙýǋ

ƗƇƥƧdžǴǬǮǮƘ!ĂƦƒĂ Üǀ!ƦýƕƥƋƨƞơdžƥ

ƚýƞƨ!ƒ ƔƞǑƊǍ

Ǐ ư dž ÜƇǴƧǂƔǴǂ ƇǬơƬdžƧƱƇǰǑƇǰdž ƇƕǑƏƨƒ ýƕ

ƊǲƥƞƞƞƒƊǍǋƞǉƒ ƇƋƳǮƨƞơdžƥ Ǐ !ǫ Σ ǒ Ƈǂ!Ă..ǋǬƧƱ Ǒƽ

!..ýƥǕƒ Ǐ ƊǮǂƑǴ !ƒ ǂ ƛǕƛƒ ƊǴǕƒ Ɣ ƕƕƟǴǉƒ ǋƖƧƥǋǋ

ÜǂǑƬƇǳǮ ƽ ƒƧƵ" ǑƽǴǴǰĂdž ƇdžǨƒƧĂƱƦƒ yƕǴƘ ƇǂĂ

!!!.... ƱǕƒ Ƈdž ǑƇǴƒƊƲ ƧƥƊƔĂ

.. ƧǒǂƒƥǕƒ ƇǴĂ

ýĂƙÜƘƒĂ!ƒ ǂƮ ǴƧ ƇdžƱƧǴǰƦǮƥǕƒ ƊǍƟǴǭ Ă

Ǐ ù ƊǮǮƊǍǋƞǉƊǍǀĂ ÜƥǕƒ ǂƬ ƧƽƨƞƦǒ2 ĂƮ ĂƥǕƒ ƇƊ

.ǴǴƒĂdž

ƘùƛƕǴƞǰƇǲdžƵǂƊýƺǴƙƊǮdžǮƒ ǴƥǴ ƇƊƧƞǰǑĂ

Ǒù5Ƙùǂdžǰ Ă ÜƐùƬ ýǂ Ǵǰ Ƙǒ ǀĂ Ü!ƟƧ!ƒ ǀƦƞǉǴǫ

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

..

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

ý‡! lƥG džŽŬP ƥzk LƊÜGƥDžŽ LƥzkŏLƥ NƉK'ǒ LĂ

!...Gǰg Gǰ zhĂ .ýGžƒ

.. łŹŽ dž Ƨɳkł ƥĂơ!ƒ K'Ƭhu

.. ƥž!ƒ DGĐ !ƠƒRNjDĂžƒ Lƥ

.ƠdžƧTŹ łǒƥG!ƒ łŹG!ƒ Ŏ5NƉƠLĂƥz!ƒ ƬhĂ

Ăƥùz!ƒ LƊýĂù|k Ü ƧùT!ƒ Ĭ !gGƥƧ ǎƥơgk'žhĂ

ƥùƑG ùzhĂ. "LƥƧùhq" LƥhĂ "łǒTLǰž ƒƧŹ" Lƥh| Ƨoko

Ÿ2 GT‡R ů! NjKGƧĂƥ ǎƥơgŷ ƧDNƉ Ŏ! ýĂ|ǒłǒƧ !ƒ

NƉĂ ÜŎ ǒƧ!ƒ ǒƧŬ!ƒ Ĭ DžŽŬTLĂƥz!ƒ LƊýĂ|k Njg K'ƥG5

|| !R LƊĂ Ü| ů Üƒ DǒžĂ NĂơ Ƨgơǒ ƬhĂ ÜNDžŽGƥĂdžýkoƒ

."LƥƧhq" LƥhĂ "łǒTLǰž ƒƧŹ" Lƥh ǒƧŬ!ƒ yŬp|Gǰdž

.. Ăƥz!ƒ ydž| kTǒLƊłǒƧ !ƒ ƥƑ K'DžŽ

ƑĂùDƒž GƧhK'DŽƒĂ .NjĂdžLǰT ok LƥdžNjlǰžLƊ

ƥƧùhG LƥǒŧDĂk LƊƥƧ!ƒ LƥĂ .ł ƥơ GƧǰžĭ ĂƧDyƒƧ!ƒ

.ypĂdžƒRNjLŹ Ăƥz!ƒ

.. GƥG łƛƠƒłŹG!ƒ Ŏ5Ă

Dƥžpĭ ùDžŽƧǒ ǒĂƥz!ƒ ƥƧ! łɳƧP!ƒ lĂ|!ƒ ƨǒǰk Lƥ

.lĂ|!ƒ lǰRǰGǰƱPDLƊDG ĂƧgdžLƥĂ .ǒGĂ

.. Ƨηǫ̈DŽĂƶ ýĂDyʠdžǓƻPLJLJDǴ ĂƧǫdžLJǵĂ

ýùηƶRDǗǴLJǾǂ ǂʅ ǴƧ ƨǂƧdžǮǴǬŎ ǫȽǴǮĂ KLǂĂ

.ǴǵǸNǰ !ǥǁ ƧơRLǑǂ! .Ƨηǫǰ ǨĂƶ

.. ǴǵǴ ǴĂơ ƐT ýǂ LǵǶ

ǴǰǂĂ KǶƕǓKǴǬ" ǴǰǰǰĂk KLǵ ǑRǰ lƧdžǃ dž Ǐ lơ

.ƾ ŏǆž DǮžǑƼǂƥƷǃ dž

.. ǂʅ ǴƧ!ǰ ƨǂƧdžKDƿĂ

LJdž ƧTdž Ǒ!Ǵǰ ǂƕƧdž ǕƧƕLJĂǫǃǮ ƉƵKƕŎƵ

LJƵ DǰǗʅ DǗKǴη" lƧdžǜʅ dž ƉƵýƕǰ ƾ ĂƼǴǰĂdž

ǊƕǶK ùʅ ʅ ơDǴdžǮŏƥ!ǰ LǵǶ .lƧdžǃ dž ýĂơ ýǰĂơǕǰ

.ƏƥǴǰƐT ýǂ LDǑʅ ǫȽǰ

.. ǂʅ dž!ǰ LJdžƵǴ!ǰ ɣƧǴƵ ƙƕƧǰ

.ǁ ƧơRLJDƕǓ LǵĂ

!..ǂƵǮdžǫǑ ǂŏǴLJĂƕǰ Ǐ ƞǰǰ..lǽƼLǂ!

ƥǰ TDDžǂƧƕǂŏTdžƾ ǰƧƵ" Ǐ ƉƵýǴƧǴǰ KTƥƕ

!ýƕƥLJdžŏdžǊ

.ǴǰǂƧdž KTƥǂƼ.. LƥǢ

.DǮƞǰ ǰRǊǰǊǰĂǕ Ǐ ǀƕDLJDɣηƼ.. LƥĂ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

!ũƑĞƒ KˆzƱŤĂ

ƇƒŠĂ Lƞdžǂdž[illegible]ƛLƇƉǁ ƚTŏĂƒ ƥơƊKˆƨ[illegible]ǃ

.KˆƓ[illegible]ƊǂƓ dž ƴ[illegible] Lƞdž[illegible]ƈ ƥƑƒ ƨƞǀ

:Ŏƪ ƽLŎƼ ƴĂƥƊKˆǂĂ

!ƥ[illegible] ƴƓ[illegible]ǆƒ ƥƨƞdžĂĂ *

:Ŏ! ƴĂǀŏ ƖƨdžƫdžŽ ǌǌĂdž ƚŏƨƪ !ƒ ƥƑƥǅĂ

..ŎzƒĂdž ƊǅǄ[illegible]K Ɠ[illegible]ƒ Lƞ

!...ƚǂƑƑ!ƒ || ǖƪ Ǚƒ KˆƨƷ Ɠ[illegible]Ă

ǗNJǋĂƥơ Ɗ[illegible]zƕƊ[illegible]ƒ Ɠ[illegible] ƴƱƥ Ǐ Ʀƒ ƴƓ[illegible]ǗƓ..Lƥƞ

!....ƴƥĂ ƥƥ.. NJƱƓƊLƉƓK!ĂƓĂ

ƖƥƓƣ dž Ɠ[illegible]ǖdž[illegible]dž |ƕLƉƔƞŏLǂ Ɠ ŏƊ..Lƥƞ

ǼNJKƓ[illegible]ƕƓ[illegible]ǅĂƥz!ƒ Ɗ[illegible]ǏƙơǗƓ[illegible]ƔƊǅLƉǗ ǗKˆƓ[illegible]ƊŽ

!..ǀƥƪ Lƥ ǂ ƨƓƼ

ǗLƞǖLƒ Lǆ[illegible]ǖdž ǖƊǅNJǅĂǆƒ ƓƓǅƒ LƼ Lƥ[illegible]Ă

!..Ɗ[illegible]ƒ ƥƑƒ ƨƞǀ ƇƒŠ Lƞdž[illegible]ƥƊ

.. ƴ[illegible]dž KˆƉǅĂ

"!ƚƌǅƒ KˆƓ[illegible]ƒ ƚǌĂdž !ƞ.. LǆǙƒ Lǆ[illegible]dž ƥƪ ƥƊ

***

ﺈù|ǒƨƠhǜNJ mjjƒĂDLƊƔ ŋǒĂ .Lƙϱ Ƨǒǩ ƥ Ƶ ƿĂdǅ Lϱ
Ăƥƶ!ƒ ƥƮ ! ÜLǰƶdǯ ǴǗLǰ ƊƵǍ ƶƨĂdǅǇǰĂƥ K'Lǥ ƥ! .lƥƥŋ
LƊǑù NJÜK'ƊƠǍǑƦƒ ﺈ ƛƧǤ!ƒ ƊǂƗ! .ɯƧƢ!ƒ Lƥdǅǵƥ ƊǍƊmǵǵdǅ
Ü'ﺈ ǒù TLdǰǅ ƺ ƒƧƵ" ýPƒƥ ƠhƮ ƬĂ Üƺ ǴǗLǰ ƒƦNJƺ ƧƦPƒ Ăƥƶ!ƒ
!nj Ăơ Lƥdǅ ǴƥLǰ Ʀƒ ƺ ǴǗLǰ ýPƒƥ ï ƊD

.ﺈ dǍǵdǅNJǴK'Ʈ ǒ ƺ ǴǗLǰ Ɣ ƊǍϱ
.NJǅ ƥƮ ƊƊǍĂơ K'Lǥ ﺈ dǍǵdǅ
NJ! K'ƇǴT ǴǅǕƥƊǍǑƼƟƧdǅƵ Ă Ăƥƶ!ƒ LǂǴ..Lƙϱ
!.....ǴǰƮ ƒĂ Ɣ Ǵ ƵƊɣƠ|ǒĂ ÜǴǵ ĂƊƺ ƨdǅǑƗ! ÜNJƠP
:ﺈ ǥnj ǑǴK!ǭ ƗĂ
Þ....K'ǴǵƊǍƒƥǴ dǅ LƶǴdǅ LƥƊ
!..Ƨƥ!ƒ ǴǰǴǰLƮ ǑƦƒ ﺈ ƵĂƧdǅ LɑǴdǅ K'Lǥ
.lƧùTǴǅLǰƶǴùdǅ ƺ Ău5"LĂǴ NJ ýhǴǰ K'ƠƮ ƥ!
!....ýdǅƒ Ï ƊǍLƥƥǴƧǒ ǴhƮ ƬĂ..űŮƶĸĂ
.. ﺈƮ Ǵ!ƒ ƨƗƧdǅLƥdǍǴƧƢ K'ƨƥ
.ﺈ ƶǒǨ!ƒ Ï ƊǍǑƮ ǥhjƧdǅƒ NJƒĂDLƊƔ ŋǒ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

!ýhĢĿĵ ʦ ĩůDĹDýĂĢŕDĭ ƥŏŎ5"ŎdĂŔĵ" yŠƥdžĸK'Łį

yùŗĂdž Ŏùƥűk Ŏǂ! ŎƿĂ5Lƥdžłǳk K'ĿĢŕ ŎŔĵ ýhĢĿĵ

.Ģŕþǫ NĵĸDŎŔĵ

! ŎŞP ƨ5ĢŕhK ĩ ĩ ơD. ĺĉĵ5Ă

ýùhĢĿĵ K'ĿĢŕ .KĵĂŢ Ūĵ ŎƿĢŕLƶ ƻ Dǅdžǳ DŽK'ĂŢ

ĢŔùŢ ĢŕƶĢŕĿĵŎ5yĿŢ kŨĢŕĵƥNDĭ !ǫŎŢ Ƭ ʦ Ă5ǂƶŠLǳdž

.ƻ ƱĢP!ĵ yŏƻŢ !ĵ ŎŏĵĂ ƨŏŪĵ LƥhŨĿ ĢP

ʦ ùŞPhNĵƱDĂƞŠŨŎƿĂ5NǳdžD ĭ Ŕĵ K'ĂŢ !ĵ ĵŔNjĢĿƻ

ƻ Ƨùŏ5 ÝƥĢŕŢ !ĵ ŧ ĢŕŢ Ƨ NƥŢ ŏĢƥƶ ŨƧŎ!ĵ ǂơLĵD

!.Ư ƧŪĵ Ĭ !ǫƱŢ ŏĂ

!.. K'ĂŢ !ĵ ĵŔNjƻ ƧƶDŎLǫ

ƧùPơĬ ù!ǫĢŕĵĂùŢ Ă ƥùLƶ ǂDŽĵ ƱĂŢ K'ĂŢ Nǫ

!.ĢŕĢƶdž

Ƨĵƥùŋ Ĭ ùdž Ŏ5ŨƯ ƧŪĵ Ĭ DƶƶƧŢ hŎŢ ŞĵK'ŏ!D

.DŽĵdžƯ ŞPLǳdž

!.. ƧĢŕŞĿŪĵ K'ƶŢdž LƥĿĢŕĂDLƥĵĂ ǂŏĿĢŕƥƶƕ

ǂùĢĂĢǂ ýĵƨŏĢdžƻĢŕŞĿŪĵ ƧĢŕ K'ƥŋĂ5ŎŢ Ƭ K'ƶƧ

!Ƨĵƥŋ!ĵ Lǳă ƧPŪĵ ǂŏĢĵ Ĭ DƶĢĵĂŋĵ

!.. ƗhǒǚƵ Ʋơ Ɨhƨư hƙǨĂƞLj ǻƽ5.. Lǹǫ

Ĭ ù!ǫKʻzǻǿƽǯǻ5Ý ƨǒǂǻƒ ĂDýdǻ!DžǤdžǁ ƇǨǰLǂöDž

ýĂǕ KʻDǮŽƗǒǻǻǕƒ LǺǶT!ƒ Ɨ|ƱLdžǨǗƓdž!ƒ ƗDǮŽ5Ɨ|ƱLdž

:|| ƇǨǰNǻƞĂ ƱhǤʻ

!Ɨ?ʈ ƨǻdžƗ|ƱLdž !ǫyDǮǺ ǻĂLǹ!ƒ ýǂ ƗP

ýùhǻƗǂƨƶdž Ĭ !ǫKʻƞƨP ƗǒǻǻǺʈ !ƒ Ɨǒƨʈ !ƒ LǅDKʻdǮŽ

.ýǒǻhǒǑ!ĂƮ Ă

.. ƲƶPǒƟǕʈ !ƒ ýdǒ Ĭ DǮŽƨǻǤ ýǂ ƮǻhƲ

.. LǺPǤǕ!ƒ ƲƶP

.. KʻƒƨǤʈ !ƒ ĂǰƑǤ Ĭ ƙơĂ

.DǸǻơDƨǂƗPDK!ƨǤdžǑLǰǰ KʻƒƨǤʈ !ƒ ĂǰƑǤ ýĂǻƶĂ

!ǻǻơ!Ǥ NǻDŽǤĂ.. KʻƨƵ NǰǯƒLǤ

.ƗdǯǰǯǒDDǤǮǻǂƨǩǒLǂöDǮ

.Kʻƒƨƞƶdž NǰǑǒǤdžĂƞLǰǤǰǻLǤĂ

LǰǤǂĂ Ǖǰ ǒƞ!ƒ ǑǻƮǩ dǮǑ5ƨĂƞƮ ƗǩdǰǮǑPDNǻ!ǻ!

Ƶ ƨùƶǨĂ ǕNǰǻơǑKƮǻĂ ǕNǻƵĂ ǕǑǻƮǩ dž Ǒ5 Ǥǰ ǒdž

Ǒù5ýùʈ hǋǤƮ dǮNǰYĂǻǤǻ5NǰǮĂ Ǒ! ýǤǮĂ ǕNǰǤ

.DǤǮ!ƒ

:Nǰ!Ǵöï Ʀʃ Ɣǒǩ̈DǨ̈ǷǯƵ

Ƿ…ǂǬ̈ǮǍ Lǰdžǧǆ

: ýǴ

Nǰ! ĆŐT ýǿž LǰǍzǒǑʔ ǒǷ Dʼnǰǂ .. Ǚ !…..ǴǰǶ

!ǴǒƨǆǑ5

ǡǑP Nǰ.. ‖ǴǰǰNǴǒ Ǒǂ! ǗǴǒǆƨ5ǴǑ..LǷ:ɩǂ5

ǂoǍǥdžǿ ǃʃ ýǹ KǴǂ LǰǶʃ ǗKʃǍTǴǷ LǰdžǷǴǰdž ǷǶ

.DǷǰǴǆ

KǴdžNǰLǰǄ5ǶNǰǆù ǒDž KƨƵ ýǹDLǛ ƨ ɕǑǬǍ

.ǴǒƨǆǍ !ǥǰƨ KʃǴƨǹǥDǨLDýǷǗNǰ ƨdžǒ

.. ýǴ ǂǒDǏ ǯƵ

.. "ǂǒTǰǯǂʃƨƵ" Ǒ5ǂǬǴǰǂǂƨƶǯǮǍǶD

.. ǴƶǴǂ ǂǴLǰǒǥʃ ǐ Ʀʃ ǍǷzDǯ

KùdžǰǍ ǛĆŐùT ǴǹǰǒƨƱ Ǒ5ƨ |ǒDžǑƦʃ KǴǷDǯ

Ɣù DǮǑù5 KǑhù ǮǍ ǗǷǰǍǯ KoǴǹǍ Ǘ‡ǴǶ ‖ǖ ǚʃ

.ǰDǷǯ

.. ǴǰǍǆ ǂǍ5 ɩƨǴǶʃ ýǴǰDǯ

ƚ Ăù 5 Ɣ ĂƧù Ʊ!ƒ DĞźĭ!ƒ 2 ďƨ KĂƮ ýǺdžŎ5ŀzģĂƒ

.ĞĵĂďƨ

ƧPĐĭ hƾdžǒĭ Ʀƒ ÜƩ ƑĞƒ YƱĢǃĵŎ5LǰŋƧĞ!ƒ ĞĵĂŀŋ!

!ďƺlƧƱƿ

LǰĂĞoǒ DŬŽŅĂ LǰĂƱƮ ǒ LǰƦƒ ÜlƧĞŰƒ ƟŭƮ ƿĂŀŋ!

!|| ŭƮ Űƒ Lǰdž yƱ|ĿĵĞǆƞ Ă

.. LǰPĞƱDŽ

Ŋǰǒƨ ýƮ ƙLǰDKZĞƦ ƒ ĞǆĂŋƧP LǰƦƒ .. LǰƑĞDŽ

. Ɵŭƭ LǰdŽDĵǒD

ŎƼlƧdžĂŰ KƧnǰ ŎƦƒ ÜĂƿz!ƒ KĞƿlĞűdžĂ|DŽĵ

.ŀǂƧzdž

"!ŀ DĞĭ ŹƧƱƾ .. 2 ƿĂdžĭ DŽKƧƱƾ ĞĿĵƿĂ

الفصل الرابع عشر

hbyDĚŽ+ Ĭ ʒ Fdĝ3 Dǰž .. Ŷɛ

Lʃŏĵ ÏÐǯ ƨơ ƚɳŏǨ LʃK'Lǥ ŎǨʃ ýdǮʃ ƚlŏP ƚdǮ Ųĵ Ă

K'Lǥ ù ƚŏŏơ Ǥʃʃ ù ƚÐǮǮʃĂư Ðǀ ǤʃK'Lǥ ǕčĕĐĚ

.ĭ ƧȚ dǮ ýǨǤdǮƚZǤȚ! ǤǤ ȚǤZʃĂ ǤǮhɹ

Ŏù5ls ƧǤƚdǮZ "ƚŏȚLdǮ ʒ ʃƧZ" ƚǂƧzdǮ Ųk ƻ Ăĵ Ă

lƧŏȗ Ðǿǩk ýĂơ Σ Ǥʃ ƻ ÐǮ ǤdǮ Ü Lʃŏĵ ÏÐǯ ƨơ lƧŏ

.ɤ Ƨơ!ʃ ljǨNj

ƚlŏǂ!ʃ ɤ Ƨơ LǥƧÐŸ Ǥ!ʃ ƧȚ Ǥʃ ʃǮ ýǤǮ ǮǮLǥ

LȚÜ"ƚŏȗ ȚLdǮ ʒ ʃƧù Z" ƚŏǤǮɹ ǂÐǮK'Lǥ ŎǨʃĂ Üȓ ʃǤ!ʃ

ŎùǨʃ lƧù ŏǂʃ ƚǂƧzdǮ Ŏ5Ǌ ǂȗǀ ƧǤŏ LȚĂ ÜǊǤǮhȗȚŏ

ɤ Ƨù ơ Ŏ5lƧdǮĂÜ ʃĂǊʃ Ǥŏ5ÐǮǨ ʃ ŎǨʃĂ Üǀ ǤʃK'Ƨʃ

.K'Ǥǥʃ Lʃŏĵ ÏÐǮ

Ŏù5lǡɳ5K'Ƨù ɳȷ ʃƚŏĂǊʃ K'ʃĂ!ʃ K'Ǥǥ K'Lǥ

..ƚǂƧzdǮ

LǮ5ù dǮ K'ǤȚ ÐǀǤʃ ýǂ Ŏ5ǤʃǮŏ LɤǊ ƙ K'ǨPÐ

!!!!...K'ǤǮÐǮǤǤ dǮ LǮȚ dǮ LʃŏĂʃ

***

!… ۃƘǤǔ ƊǤƊƳĂƧƊǇdžǬǤĂǔ|| !ƦLǤƒ ƥ!

ƥù|5Ÿ ƥùơ ǐ Ƙƒ Ư ƧǬƦ ƮƊǕǷǂƬǺ ƧǂƊǑư ƉƵLƥơ

Ǐ ù!ǥ ùǕƧƱ!ƒ Ǒù5Ƨƥùnƙ lƧdžǭǕ Ăƥǂ!ƒ KƇǤƥKƧnǰ

Kùpǂ ƦPƒĂ ǗǤLǰƒĂdžKƇǤƥù!ƒ ǉƦNjKơ ƙƒ ƦǥžǗǤǰƒĂdž

KƇǤƥù!ƒ ǉƦù NjKdžƙƒ ƦǥĂž ǗǤǰĂơ lƥǂNǰž YƇƥƒ KƇƥǤLj

."ƚǒƬLǥǰ ƒƧƵ" ƔƊƵ!ǥKƊƵĂ Ǐ ƙơ ǗǤǰ ǯ!ǰǤǤƧƱ

ăƊùnǸƥùƶǒƊž ǒơ Ǘƒ ǤƵ!ƒ Ǐ LƥǰžǇdžKηƧP ƦǥĂž

LƊǏ ù!ǥƟǖùƮ !ƒ ýdžǏ ƊƵƧƥǤýηƧ ýǂ yƥƊǑǂ! ǗƊǕǰ

.KƇǤƥƒ ƊƵƙƶ pĂǒLƊǰƮ ηhýĂǤǒ

.. NjƑƥ ýǂhƚ ƥơ ǐ Ƙƒ ƒƦNjƯ ƧǬƦƮ ƊLƥơ

ǕƥùơƒĂƚƵǤƮ Ǒ5ƶ pĂdžƒƦNjƧĂƱƙƶ ǥǂ ƧǂƦƊƊž

:ýĂpƧƥĂƵƊ

!!!……..Ÿƒ ĂNj.. ƚǂƧƶdžǉƦNjƑLǤ

.. ƚ!ĂǂdžƵǒ ƚƵƧƮ hƧĂƱǒƐT ýǂ LǤ

ǵù|ơ ƱùƮ Ă Ǐ ù!ǥKƥù|ƙƥKǗǤdž!ƒ ƚƊƵ5KLǤ

Ǒùƙƒ lƧǒƮ !ƒ KƇǤƥ yƥdžKLǤĂ .ǑǂĂT!ƒ LƦǤYĂƨdž

.ƊƥƊǑ5lƨNǤ ǗƚǒƧpƚ5ǤdžǇdžKƇǤƥƒ ƚdžĂǤdžǒƦ ƙ

.ƒƦƊƊǰǥƧƥƮ ǒLǇdžƵǤƙƒǑ5ƒĂLǤ

LJDÜǕGú !ƒ ƥơDydžDŋǰǤGŋ zhŏRƒ ƨgŽÜƒ KˈLǥĂ

ɣƨùʅ ƙĂ ÜĢǕP ŎƼĂƥz!ƒ GǿƙƼŎRƒ lƨʓʎƒ ƒĂǤŽ ƒĂƍǰƙŏ

.GǯƑǥ ƽ GŁǰPƒƥ Ĭ !ǥGŋǰdž

!DŋǰǤGǦǰƙdžDǍʅnǰƒ LǥĂ

ƒĂƥĂùzŏLJDDŋǰDŽŽǕ ƨǰƙ ƥzƒĂ!ƒĂ ýĂʈ Üƒ ý‡ KˈLǥĂ

.ǤƨĂƒ Ĭ !ǥ

Dǰž|ƙŏLJDţ ǍĂGʈGǿ Ĭ !ǥKˈhDŽLǰơ ŎLǰƼ..|| !Ʀ ydž

.ĆŐʈ Ĭ DŽŽ ĂDŽ ‡|DŽǰǰʅ Gdž ŰǥƥŋDDǰǰdžǰ ǑĂ

yƼùdžǰƥùŏŎƼĂ ÜŎ‡ĂʈƒLǰƙƒ ǕʅĂ Dŋǰǰƥơ DýDŽ

ƨUƙǥýUĂ ÜɣDŽƒ ‡LǰdžŎƼDŽǰ ƙNǰǤ ƶDĬ DŽĂ ÜKˈGǰƥ

DŽĂ ÜNǰLǰdžGDŽƨʈƶ ƥzhĬ DŽKơʈǰ Dĭ ƙơ ÜĂƥz!ƒ ‡Gǰƥ

ŎƼGǰƥdžĂ lƨʈGǰdžGǰDŽʅ ƙ‡|DŽƒ ƒƦĂ ÜNǰƼdžGǰDŽƽ DŽD

!ƨʅ hǰƥ Ǒdž

. . KˈƥĂƒ Σ ǰLŎƼ

ƽĂùƼPùdžĂƥùz!ƒ Gǿʅ ƙƒ ŎRƒ ‡DŽǰƒ ǕNGơ LǥǴ

ƥùzhLǰdžNǰDŽĂ NǰĂʈ ŏÜPƈKˈGǰyƼdžǰ|ʅ dž ÜGǰƒĂdž

"!ƽ ƨdžĂ..ƨŋǰƙǰ‡ǰǤ‡GǰƒƦƼÝ‡DŽŽGD

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

Üĭŵƌǉƣ ǌhƣǴŀŋɲĎǮŽǑŢ ŎŔĸƒ Ư ƧŪƒ ĸ'Lǵ .ŧǂƵǌdǅ Ư ƧD

!.. ǴƒƥĴƒ Ă ŧ ƵǴĭT!ƒ LǮ ŧ ĥŏŋƵ ǪŃ Ţ ƿĭ ĂƧk

ŧ oĥŀoýŏĎǮŽǑ5 ĸ'ŋƧP ŎŔĸƒ ÜƐĸǴƧĂƥ ă ƥoǫ ĸ'ƧǮ ƥ!

åûýõÿåÿăîýåÜĿƥPǴŀƠ!ƒĂ LĵƑǴŢ !ƒ Ư ǌhŧ ƛŋ LǮ

Ŏù Ŕĸƒ ŧǂƑǴT!ƒ || ůŢ Ūƒ ƥǌhǴŋĎǮŽĸ'ƧǮ ÜŢ ƑǴƒ ŧǂƵǌdĎŽ

DǈǕƒƥTŪƒ ƥĂŀŋ!ƒ ǕǑǊLǄŪ|| !Ŗ Ĭ LǌdǈLǥĂ . ǴǅƒĂdǑdǈk

Ư ƧŪƒ Ĭ ù ĎǮǋƥƧǴdǆĂŋƧP ýhǗĂƥǌ!ƒ ƒĂƥƵŏ LĴhƒĂǂŧŏ

!ǊĴĂǑPĂ ǴĴĂǑP LĵhƉǮŏ!ƒ

ǴǈLƧŏdǆ ýŏŢ Ǵĸƒ ýŏŢ ĸƧŢ Ǵƒ ƥĭǮ ýǴǅ ýŢ ƒĂŏĂ

:ǅƑǴǊƒƧǂŖdǑ5"ŧŏTLdǆ ɜ ƒƧǮ" Ŏ5ŧ ƥơ

ýĂǴoDǴĸƥŧ ŧŢ Ǵ2 ƨǂƵdǈLdǈĎǮǅ|| ĎǮ5ĸŢ ĎĂ

.. ǊǮ2 ƥĂdǆƧĂŢ ŔDLĴD

DĂǈŋǊLĴDŪ ƧĂùŢ ĸŎ5||T!ƒ ýhŏŪ ĭ Ŗƒ Lǵ ƥ!

ƥù|!Ă .ŧdǮ ŧǑP Lǈǅŋ "ŧŏTLdǆ ɜ ƒƧǮ" Ŏ5ǴĎǮǅĂƥǌ!ƒ

ýŋƥ Ƿ....ŧdǮ!ƒ ǊǑP! ă Ƨŋ ƒŖǴǮ. ǴǅƒĂdǑǴĎĂƥǌ!ƒ ýT5

!Ƿ....ƧPƈLǵdǑ5ǴĴƒǉkýĂǴŢ

K'ùdĐžŽÜĞŋĴĂŏ lþžŀļþłŏŏĔ!ƒ Ĭ ĐžŽĭƧŋ|!ƒ Ŏ! K'ĿĢ ĂłĂ

!… ł|ȸo!ƒ LJƸ ƒŖĎł þžŀŏĐ!ǰƧĂŢ ŔDK'Ŀŋ ĞĺŽĴD

ù ||ù!Ŗ þžhK'ƒƧĂŢ Ŗƒ K'ŔĐĞŀŽù ŽƵ5ĂþžDŽK'ĿĢ

.łdŽ łƱP

ƽƒƧŔPƒ Ĭ ĐžŽ !ĂŰƒ ĞĸŌŽdŽŎ5łŏŀþŽƱP!ƒ |ŀŖNjK'ĿĢ

ƽùŏƧƱ Ĭ !ǫ ą|! ÜĞŋdŽNĴĂĞdŽŎ5Ăþž!ƒ ýT5 ĞĺŽŽĞŋƒĂdž

."LƒþŏĂ ƽƒƧƵ" þŀŽ ƽƧƱ!ƒ yƱĈkĬ ĐžŽĐǰŋ5ÝƧPƈ

ÜŀþùŏžŀþłùŏŏƧ!ƒ Ĭ ĐžŽĭƧŋ|!ƒ Ŏ! K'ĿĢ Ăł ǎƧPĐĭƧdŽ

K'ƒĂùþ þĂŀŏ LĢ ĭ Ŗƒ "LĴĂƈ ýĞŋŏƱýŏŽĴĂł!ƒ K'ŏĐ K'Ŀŋ!

ÜĐŋŋùTŏŎł! |ŀþŀŋ Ŏ5ƔƱPŏĂNĴ Ɣ |Ŀƒ || ƧĞdŽŎ5Ăþž!ƒ

."ƽ ƧƱ!ƒ yƱĈŖ" łłƧƵdž !ǫDŀþŀƧPŏĐŽ

!ƧŢ Ŀƒ ydŽĂþž!ƒ þĞ Ŏ|ŔŏŽù Ʋo!ƒ ĈĂ[! ù || ĞNĴ

ƽƒƧùƵ" þŀŽ "ƽ ƧƱ!ƒ yƱĈŖ" yƥĂdŽƱĂ[ƧĦ K'ȸŀŖŽþ

……łTNĴhƲLƒþŏĂ[

LJŰ ÝĞĴłŀƲĿĞłŏŀNŰƒ ƸĞyƥĂdŽ LĴDŰ| ƧþDK'Ŀŋ þ|!

ƽƒƧùƵ" LJ dŽþdŽ YĞĜ|!ƒ Ĭ ĐžŽĞŋĂþýƨƵ |ĞŋdŽNĴĂ[

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]

[illegible]

.. [illegible]

.. [illegible]

.[illegible]

..[illegible]

!.... [illegible]

[illegible]

.[illegible]

[illegible]

.[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

!.... [illegible]

....[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

Ü'ùDŋŽź ɫơƒƨŋ NǇă ƨŋƙ LŢDĭ ƨĂƨư !ƒ LǇdžNŢĂ ÜƏĂƵŰƒ

!…. LƒƧŢ džƨŋƫƒjŰǥĂ

ĦŏơƒƨŋǃƒɫŏDŽƒ NǇă ƨŋƙ LŢDLǂdžƵ ǿ LǂǃĂ

ƵƓǂƦ Ű ŨƏPƙ LŢDƓƘŰƓdž Ĭ !ǫƔ DŽŽƒƦƑĂ KŋƨPĂ

."LǰƏŋ Kŏǚǐ Ĭ !ǫýĂŢ ĂDŽPƈƽ ŏƏƱ

ŨKŰƓdžƒ ɫŏƧĂƥ KƥƓ ƓĹǥơ ŨƏŋƙ Ű ŎƙơƨƼ KLǥ

Kùŏǚǐ ù!ǫƓNǍƙdžƒƨƓdžŰĿƓ ǾƏƱ KƽŢǂƒ LŢƥƹƲ

."LǰƏŋ

Ĭ ù!ǫĬ ư ƨdžĂ Ĭ ơƨŋ!ƓƥŋƵDƓĂ .ƟƓƨƓKƥŋǇĂ

ƽ ùŏƏƱ!ƒ ƨƓŋƙ ŰƗŽŎƼDŋŨƏPLǰŎǂ! ŨƙǰƓư LǇdžơD

"…….. "LǰƏŋ Kŏǚǐ Ĭ !ǫŎƼDŽ

الفصل الخامس عشر .....

و"الأخير"

[illegible]

[illegible]

LĢĞ ǂ ŎƦƒ ÜǂŏƧ˥ ďž ǂ ħŏǂ!ƒ ǂ ǿĂŋǿƒ Kʼƒ Ă!ƒ KʼƧ˥ Ǥ

ɣƧùơ Ŏù5ÜĢnǰ ɣƧùơ LĢƧDýďžő Ƨ˥ Ǥƒ ƥħž ýǤďž

.LǰŎ˥ ĐŽ

.ǂŏ ǿƧ!ƒ Kʼƒ Ă!ƒ LǰĂ Kʼƒ Ă!ƒ ǀƦNǰLǰǂ ŏƧŬ!ƒ yŬ ƿDŽ

Ĭ ùơƧŋ!ƒ Ă LǰǤ ďž ƦĢǰLǰďž ǂ ďžƧ˥ Ǥƒ ƥħž ýǤďž Lǂ!

Ĭ ù DŽ K Ƨǂù˥ Ƶ ǂ ŏƧĂƥ ǂ Ƶ ǂ ĽǷƥ ħ ÜNǤƧ Lǰďž ư Ƨďž

.ǁ ǤNǰDŋǰ ůƵ Dž LǰƧħ Kʼħ !ǥŎħ Ǥ ǂ ŏƧŬ

ǂù ǿħ ĂƧù ŏNǰ ƒƧǂƦďž Ŏ5 Ƨ˥ Ǥƒ ƥħž ýǤďž Ĭ ư dž

:ŽƒǤ ǂ ƒơŬƒ

ŬŎǂDŽ ů!ƒ ƨǤnǰ yù5ƧDLǷDĂƒ ǁ !ƦŎ5 KʼďžĂ"

ĭ Ʀƒ ƧƦnƒĂ ǤƒƧnƒ LǰďžŎƧƦ˥Ă Nǰďž ǤĂnƒ Ŏ5 Nǰ ư ˥Ă

."NŬ˥ ƒĂ ħǤǰŽ ǀ˥ LǰLǤ

ƻ ù ƥĂħ Ƨďž 5 ƥǤ Lǰďžƒ Σ Dǰďž ĽƧǤŬƒ ǤǤ ƥ5

!ýǤ!ƒ

!Ħ. Lǰďžƒ Σ Dǰďž ǁ Ƨơk.. LŬƒ

!Þ….Ňĵ5ƇƋƠP!ƒ ĹĵŎĂ.. Lĵ€ ĹĵĐ

Lĵ̀ u dǮƒ Σ ù ĐƞŽŽ ǂ!Ă .ƧhĂǂĐď ĎǮ Ăƥz!ƒ || Ƨoƙ ƥ!

!.ŇĵĢ! Σ hoĂ ÜŇĵĻĐ ĵ Ă ÜŇĵǮ ƽ ĐŽĐ

ΥƓƙù ƒ ƓnĵŽĂ ĎČ Ă čĕ Ă čĔ Ă čē ĐƓŽĐ Kư dǮ

Ňĵ ĵǮ Ɔƙù ƽ ŏ Lĵ̀ u dǮƒ Σ ĐƞŽƞĵRƺĂ ÜƓĵĂƱP yƱ|ŏ LĵĐ Ăƥz!ƒ

!.. ýƇĵ!ƒ ƻ ƥĂ hƒ ĵRdŽƧƥ Ţ ŏĂ ÜŇĵĻĵĂ

.. ƚdǮ Ƨ dƶƱP ŎŇĵ

.. ƓĵŽŽƧƍŽdŽŎŇĵ

.. ƓĵƓŽŽĂ ƓĵƑƓ dŽĂ Ɠĵƒƥ hƔz! Ă

.. ýƨŇĵ Ż hŽ Ă

Ǖ ÜƓĵĂơ lƧ Ţ ƓdǮ ƽ ƧƱ ƒĂ ÜƓĵĂ5 ƚhĂ ĵ dǮ ƧƓĵĂ

!…. Ňĵ5|| ƧƘ Ĺ Ĺ ĐƓĵ ƠŎ ǮƘ

ƧdŽù dǮ !ƍ ƓŽƥ ÜƧhĂ ǂĐĎč Σ ŏŽƒ ĎŽ ƟƓĵ Ŏ5

ƚù |ƱdǮ Ŏù 5 ɣ ù ƑƓǂ!ƒ ƥĂ|! ƧdŽdǮ Lĵ€Ă ."ƓĂƓĵ" Ŏ5

.Ɠĵƨơ KƓĵƧŽĂ lƧ Ţ ƓdǮ

.. ƇŽ ù ʎ ɣ ƑƓǂ!ƒ lĵRŇĵK Lĵ€Ă

.ƚ Ţ ƥĢ!ƒ ƚhŏǂ!ƒ ƓŏǂĂ ƚ ŏƇĵƒ ƚhŏǂ!ƒĂ Ĭ !ĂŰƒ ƚhŏǂ!ƒ

Lǰuǆ ù|ĐŽŇǰLǜ Ňǁ ƥǒ !ƒ ǎǗƒƨǒǆǮ ƨǆĕǆǯƸ ƬƏĂ

LǱĬ ùĐŽǅ ɣǴù ʅ Lǜ! ƥƒƶʅ ǕǴùǴƒƦǭƒƦǆŽKƒĂ!ƒ ƚʅ ǴƧ

.Ƨ ù ʅ Lƒ ƚʅ ƥǴ!ƒ ƚƶǴ!ƒ Ŏ5.. ɣǴʅ Lǘƒ ǤŀʋƖƨǆŽɣƦǒ

!...ŇƽǤŀĐŽǍǜǂƒƦǆŽ |ĐŽLǱƥƶʋ

.ŇǂLʅ LǰǴŽǒP ƒƦŇLǱŎǒƧ Lǰǆž ǂǴ

ýùŋƽǛ ƨù ʅ ǆǯ ƫ ǒŋ!ƒ ƚ ĐŽŇǰɣƑǂ ƚ ǔɅǴǂ ƥ!

Ŏù5ǛƧǴ ơĐŽǋǆǅ ǆž ƨʅ ǆǯ ƫ ǒŋ!ƒ ƚ ĐŽ|ǒLǱý|ƶǒ

!Ꝥ...ɣƨƺ!ƒ LǰĂƽ ƨT!ƒ LǰŇĐŽKƥŇ yǰĂǆž

.ƚǒǴLǰǂŇ

ƒƦù ŇǰŎù5ǴǂǴʋLǱǎ ƨĐK Lǂ ƥ5..ǎƨPĐƚǒǴLǰǆĂ

ŎǺǰ!ƒ ɣ|Lƒ ýʅ ƽ!ǰǴǂǴǂ ƥ! .Ư ƨƐ ŇǰƥƶǒĐǆƧǑP!ƒ

ƒƦǴŽ ŎǴǆƒ yǒǆǑǺǰ! ɣ|Lƒ ýʅ ƙ ƥĂ .ŎǴǆƒ LƵ

Ꝥ...ǴǂǴʋ

ƚ ǖùɅɣǴù ʅ LƒLǱƨƶTĐK Lǂ ƥ5..ƚɅǴƚǒǴLǰǆĂ

ŇǰƙĂƿyùǒĂƙĬ ĐŽĂƥƶ!ƒ ĐƺǒƧ Ă ǛýǒĐǆǯ' Ĭ !ƍɣƑǂ

.ýǒǴ!ƒ Ĭ ĐŽŎʅ ǒƨ!ƒ ƫ ǒŋ!ƒ ƚƶĂǆǂǆLǰĂǴǰǰʋ

Ǘƍ.. Ĭ Ƭù!ƒ ƒƦùŋǰyǂǆžƨǆĕǆǯŎ5Lǰǆǯƚ LǱƒĂ

!.. Ňǁ ƥǒ !ƒ ǎǗƒƨǒǆǮ ŇǰƧ

.YǴǩŰƒ ăŢĐ Ĭ ĐŹŷƨĿğĿĴĐŰǥŅĵ ŏĐĔŽ || !Řydž

ŰỿǴùʅ Ŀǰ! ƚĐǮǥdžƚƱP!ƒ yư ĂhŎĿǥĐǮŰŎ! KʼǥƘƒĂ

ǴǮzhǒ ŖƒĂ ŰĂƥz!ƒ ŇǥŇĵğDž Ŗƒ ŎhĿǵ!ƒ ƾǒƧƱ!ƒ ƚƱʅ ƒĂƕ

.ʺĿǰƧhƣ Kʼŏ̈ùĬ !ǥŇǰž ơƧŋ!ƒ

.. ƚƱP!ƒ ƔƘƧDYǴǩŰƒ ƚZǴĿǰǮǴƨ KʼŏơƘƒĂ

ĿĴŇĵƱ ƥǒ !ƒ ƚ łƕǴž. ǴǹƚưĂ ĐǮĿĴĐŎ! ƧƥŏDžǂ!

:üŇǰ ƥĐŬƸƀj Dǰž. KʼƒĂ!ƒ ƚʅ Ǵƨ ĿǰǮǴĴƒŖdž |ĐŽ

ĐǂžƒĂdž ĐŽƒĂƱƼǴ .. ƔǴʅ ĿǰǴƾ łǴ!ƒ ƨdžƒ Ĭ ǯĐŽ

ʺ!......ǴǥĐǮdžƨƥǴ ýǴ!ƒ ƻ ǴǥƨĐž.

***

Ŏù5ƖƧùŏdžƚ ƒƥơŰƒ ƚǒhƨƮ Ǵƒ ƥž ýǴǩ ýdǂĂ

:ŇƒƧǂŘdž

ʺƥǒŰĿǰžƒ Σ ĐǮžƒƧ|! ǴƱ ƨǴƒ Ɣ Ƨư ƻ ǴǥĿǴĂʺ

.ʺƧhĂǂĐĐĐ ƚzdžƒ ƨŋǰ ƥzhĿǰdžƚŏǴƒ Ŏ5

.. ƥơdž ƥƵĂdž Ŏ5 Ɣ Ƨư !ƒ ǴǰĂŢĂ

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

***

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]

Lĝ͛ . Ĝģ̂ Ĝḩ̂Ădž ŠĂTLdž̧ Lĝ͛ .. ǀ̧ĐƉDĜģ̂ŽDK ŧ̧ dĂ

:ýĂǀǒNģ̂ĂLž̧

ǑLĝ͛ ŀ̧ƒ Lģ̂ƒĂDĜž ǁ ÜŠŧ̧ĜƶƒĂ ƶ Ţ !ƒĂ ƱĜǁ !ƒ ĜĝD'

.. ýlƒĞ!ƒĂ

..ǑĐǎǑ ƌ̧Ă ǀ̧ŠPcĬ ƙơ ŠĂTLdž̧ ĐƉDKǒƨ dǩ

:ýĂǀkĭ ƥĂǹƒ ŠĂTLdž̧ K'Ĝĝž K'Lĝ͛

Þ.... LĂ̧ƱĜdžŧ̧ĐLĂ̧dĐǩýNj"

ŧǜǑĐƥηĂkǕ . ýlƒĞ!ƒ ĈĂDģ́ !ŧ̧Ă ÜƱĜdžǑLģ̂ƒ ĈĂDǵŽ

.ŧƱĜǕƒ Lǉdž̧ƨdž̧ĽĂ . Ĝdž̧ŋýĢ̂ ƙǘ ! ŧĐ̧ǩĂ

ǁ !ŧ̧ǭĂ̧ŠƶTR ĐĝĞ . K'Ădž̧ .. Ĉģ̂ƒ ĜĝĜdžƱĜǕƒ Lǥ

Đŧ̧ĂùƶĂŋĂŠǒLĐĐģ̂Ăƿ ýǒƦ̧ ǒǕ . ɣǒ!ƒ ýlǳ̧ dž̧Ǒ5

ŧǜǍ!ƒ K'Ĝdž̧ dž̧ ýĜĭηŠ!ƒ Lǉǩ'ƒηLƒ LĝĽLĝž . ŧŀģ̂!ƒ

. Ĝǂ̧ƿ ĐŧĐĶ̌

.. ǘŧ̧

K'ùƿ Ĝdž̧ƶŀ'ýlƫ Šƒ'ŧĐǯ̧ ǕƒK'ƒĂ!ƒ K'Đǯ̧ ƥ̧!

ǑùƦ̧ƒ K'ƒĂ!ƒ Ĭ ĐǯĐĐķ̌ƒƦ̧Ă . ĜĝĜǒ̧ Ĝģ̂ơ̧ . ģ̂ Đŧ̧ĂƿLĂ

Đŧ̧ĂùƿƥŠƱ Ǖĝĭ ĂǥǕ NĝĂdžǵƓǕŸƒ ƥǶ ǁ ĐǶĜǶdžǒ̧

!.... 'ýǑĐǯ̧Ă 'Đǒž K'ǒǜǑ5ĜĝƶƒĂƿLǉž

Ǖùhẹ̈ǵ!ƒ ɫŏǻɗƒ ȠƑƇǖƥùhƥ ǉƦǋǉŎƽ ǇǕƒ ǇǍȿk Ɖɫǧ

ƻ ùʈ Ă .ƻùʈ ɗǯǉùɗǮƉǮƉɗǯhƥǗǉǍƥʈ kƉǩ ǑƘƒ

ǇǨǵǴǉƃǍƥ Ă Ă .ɫƉǯ ǴǉǉǉǑʈ ƉǮƉǮ ƉɫǨ ǴĂ ƉǩǍƥ

.ƴƙɗǩǉĂ

Ƥ..ǇǨǵƒ ǇǒƊ

Ƥ...ƴƙɗǩƒ ǇǒǍ

ƻƑǴƤ!ƒ ǕƍƒǍƥǖkƉǍ.ɣƑǴ ɗǯ ǕƍǴǉǉǍƥɳkƉǯɫǧ

.ɫoƥǵƒ

!.... ýhǉʈ ɗǯ Ŏƽƒ ƦǋǉƻƍƔ ƒǍƥǖkǇǉĂ

Ǉǉ Ɀ ɣƇǵù!ƒ ǇǍù ƻɀŏƥǍɳƒ ǇǇǗɫǯǮ ǨƥǋǴ ƥ!Ă

ƒǬǖùhƒǍù ƉǮŏƉǯ Ɖǩ ɣƻo!ƒ ǇǍʈjoŏ.Ɖǯr ƒƻǍ ƉǨǉĂ

ƥǖùhŏ ƊǯǖƙoƒŎƽ ù ƒǍƻɫƽǍ ŏǇǉĂ ù ƒǍƻɫƽŏƉǯ ɫhǼƍ

.ƉǩǨʈ ŏ

ţ Ăɳ!ƒ ǇǇɫǯ ǇǒƙŏƻĂʈ ǕƱŏƻƤ!ƒ Ĭ !ƍƉǮǮǨƒƦǍ

!.. ƊǯɀɗǨǴƻƒǍʈ !ƒ ɫƱǴƍƉǯŏƙkɫŏǨǮʈ Ǘƒ

:ƒǍƻƇƤkǇǇɫǯǮ

.ƒǍɗǨǯʈ ƒ .. ǉǴ!ƒ ŎƽƇǵhƥ ƉǩƻƉƦƍ

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

***

ϯù ŏǽƱ!ƒ Ĭ ĐžŽ ǥǥĂ ÜĂǒ!ƒ KƒƧǴ Lǆdž ŽƧǒdžƧǴ

ǾƐ ŏ LǺƼǂŏdž [illegible] ÜǦ ŏǂ ǂǦ ǂzƼƧ ÜǴĂdžÜƐǴ

ƱǹǴu ǂù [illegible] ǅ ù ĐŽ ŎĐǆǅù ǫ ƱǹǴ " : ǸǺ Ĭ ĐǅƱ

!"Ĭ ƧƮ dž

.. Ɣŏ ƖƧǴ KǂǂĂ

ǂ ùŏ ǂù ǥǥĂ ƖƧǴ ƪ !ƒ ƒƦĂ . ǀĂdž ƒƦǇĬ !ǫKƧƱĂ

ǀƒƨŏǴ dž ǺƼǂŏdž . ǴĂ 5 Ƶ ƧƼk ǦǴ ŏǂ ǂǦ!ƒĂ . Kzǭž

!....."Ĭ ƧƮ dž ƱǹǴ ǂ [illegible] ǅ ĐŽ ŎĐǆ ǫ ƱǹǴ " ǾƮ ŏ

.. Ǒ ǂǂǅ ǸĐLƮKƧƧǆĂ

ϯŏƱ!ƒ ƪ k ǑKƒ ǂǆĂǂƒ ĂzƼŏ LƮ ÜǴĂǆ Lǆdž K ĐŽ

. ǴǂǴǂ ǅ ŏ!ƒ ƖƧǴ Ĭ !ǫKƨǥ ĐǴ ǴǆĂdž ǴĐ

Ƶ ĂƮ !ƒ Lǆ ŽƧĂĐ ĂǔĂ [illegible] Ƶ [illegible] dž K Lǂ

. LĂǆ ŽǒǂǴ!ƒ

. ƱǴu !ƒ ǑƑ dž Lǆdž ǴƒǅŏŊ!ƒ Ĭ !ǫǑzdž ǥĂ

. "ǑdĂƒ" ǀƼǒdž LǆdžƼǒdžƪ dž Ɓŏ ǴǆdžǴĂ

Ǒù 5Üϯù ŏǽƱ!ƒ Ĭ ù ĐŽ ŽƧ Ĭ ƮǂǅŏŊ!ǴK|ĐǅĂ

ǀƼk ǑKƒ ǂŽƧǒdž ƖǴǂ Ǒ5 ÜĂǒ!ƒ Lǆu ǴǆuĐ!ƒ ǂ|Ʊǆž

***

******